00088321

BOMBAY BRANCH
OF THE
ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY.
TOWN HALL, BOMBAY.

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 04 April, 2016

NOTICES OF BRAZIL

IN

88321

1828 AND 1829.

BY THE

REV. R. WALSH, LL.D. M.R.I.A.

AUTHOR OF

"A JOURNEY FROM CONSTANTINOPLE,"

&c. &c. &c.

VOL. I.

LONDON:

FREDERICK WESTLEY AND A. H. DAVIS,

STATIONERS' HALL COURT.

1830.

88321

LONDON:

PRINTED BY R. CLAY, BREAD-STREET-HILL, CHEAPSIDE.

ADVERTISEMENT.

In the Summer of 1828, His Majesty's Government were of opinion, that the most simple and obvious mode of allaying the existing differences between Brazil and Portugal, and the most likely to be agreeable to the Emperor, was by completing the marriage between his daughter and his brother, and so bringing to a conclusion a project, which had originated with himself, and which had been, from the time of her birth, the subject of his contemplation and the wish of the Brazilian people. The legal marriage had been already performed by procuration—the ecclesiastical ceremony alone remained; and by accelerating that, the Portuguese question would be set at rest, in amalgamating Dom Miguel's rights as

Dona Maria's husband, with hers as Queen of Portugal.

To this end His Excellency Viscount Strangford was appointed Ambassador Extraordinary to the Court of Brazil, as his long residence there in a diplomatic situation on a former occasion, and his early and personal knowledge of the Emperor, would be likely to give the proposal, through him, more weight and influence. The Emperor, however, seemed disinclined to complete his own project; and it was of course found impossible to press a point of family arrangement, in which he, as father, was the sole judge.

I accompanied the Embassy, as Chaplain; and the following observations were noted down during our voyage and residence in Brazil, for the amusement and information of a friend in England.

CONTENTS TO VOL. I.

PORTSMOUTH, p. 2. Portuguese emigrants, 3. Galatea frigate—mode of taking in water, 4. Experimental squadron, 5. Mother Carey's chickens, 6. Sadler's balloon, 7. Lisbon packet, 8. Whale and thresher, 9. Exercise at guns, 10. Brilliancy of the constellation of Scorpio, 13. Modes of punishment, 14. Fog-bank mistaken for Madeira, 16. Deserters, and absurd corruption of foreign names, 17. Porto Santo—discovery, and reason of the name, 18. Extraordinary opinions entertained of Madeira, 20. Founded in natural causes, 22. Madeira, 23. Lights on shore, *ibid.* Uncertainty of its fate, *ibid.* Portuguese squadron lying before it, 24.

Land at Funchal, 25. Basaltic coast, 26. Streets, 29. Carriage of Madeira wine, 30. Dress and appearance of peasantry. *ib.* Beggars, 32. Markets, 33. Leathern bottles, 34. Grapes and wine, 35. Portuguese coopers, 36. Curious superstition of bananas, 38. Citron, 39. Water, and dangerous torrents, 40. Wooded mountain, 41. N. S. d'el Monte, 42. Lizards, 43. Volcanic soil, *ibid.* Processions, 44. Captain Canning, 45. Premature and sudden death, 47. Idle rumours of the cause, 48.

Madeira and Porto Santo, the Fortunate Islands, 50. Discovery in modern times, 51. Alcaforedo's account of Macham, 52. Reasons for and against its authenticity, 61. Wines from Cyprus and sugar canes from Sicily, introduced, 62. English residents 63. Former intolerance of islanders, 64. Constitutional principles, and first press sent from England, 66. Fluctuation of politics, 67. General Valdez assumes the command, 68. Military force, 69. Strange project to excite the people in favour of Dom Miguel, 71. Valdez and his friends declare themselves, 73. Ceremonies and rejoicing, 75.

Portuguese frigate arrives, and again departs, 76. Insurrection of the peasants, and the bishops sent from the island, 77. Resolute determination of the people, 80. Portuguese fleet appears off the island, 81. Cruises without attempting to land, 82. Packet arrives with constitutional officers, 83. Portuguese fleet disappears, *ibid.* Returns suddenly, and lands at Machico, 84. Defence of the islanders, 85. Explosion of the military chest, 86. General Valdez harangues the soldiers, 87. Funchal surrenders, 89. Constitutionalists take refuge on board the Alligator, 91. Transferred to a merchantman, and sail for England, 92. Astonishment of the Portuguese at their easy conquest, 95.

Prayers at sea, 96. Superstition of sailors, 97. Crane from the Canaries, 98. Gorgades of Hesiod, 99. Maternal affection, 100. Flying-fish, 101. Singular occurrence, 102. Cape Verde Islands, 104. Family of bottle-nose porpoises, 105. Bonitos and albicores, 106. Suffocating heat, and expectation of a storm, 108. Calms, and why, 109. Visit from Neptune, 110. Unhealthy damps, 111. Cross the Equator, 112. Ceremonies omitted, and why, 113. Not known when they were first practised, 114. Some of the characters emblematic, 115. Sun vertical, no

shadows, and rapid descent, 116. Life of a sailor on board, 117. Pope's compass, 118. Exquisite beauty of the stars, 119. Southern cross, 120. Described by Dante, Amerigo Vespucci, and Camoens, 121. Luminous sea, 123. Probably phospo-reseent, 124. Midshipman's origin of dog-watch, 125. Cape Frio, and extraordinary cold, 127.

Sugar loaf, 128. Lord Hood's face, and physiognomy of rocks, 129. Singular beauty of the harbour of Rio, 130. Villegagnon, 131. Repercussion of sound from the hills round the bay, 132. Land at Palace-square, 133. Impression of slave population, 134. First impressions corrected, 136, Negroes as soldiers, 137; as citizens, 138; as priests, 140. Irresistible conclusion, 141. British merchants, 142. Barred-up windows removed by a decree, 143. Rua and Travessa, 144. Campo de Santa Anna, 145. Streets blocked up by hills, 146. Pleasant residence on the sea-shore, 148.

Discovery of the country by Cabral, 149. Name changed from Santa Cruz to Brazil, why, 150. Harbour, why called Rio, 151. Colony of French Hugonots, the first European inhabitants, 152. Expelled by the Portuguese, 153. First city built outside the harbour, 154. Called S. Sebastião, why, *ibid.* Present site very unpromising in its primitive state, 155. Ecclesiastics avail themselves of the best situations, 156. Second invasion of the French, *ibid.* Third under Du Guay Trouim, 157. Rio made the capital of Brazil, 158. Idea of removing the seat of government from Portugal entertained by Pombal, *ibid.* Revived and carried into effect, 159. First impression of the news on the Brazilians, *ibid.*

First act of the king on arriving at Bahia, 161. Proceeds to Rio, 162. English the first strangers settled as residents, *ibid.* Restrictions removed from native industry, 163. Printing and gunpowder

introduced, 164. Military hospital, and chemical laboratory established, 165. Indians reclaimed and settled, 166. Vaccination introduced, 167. Theatre built, *ibid.* First French arrive, *ibid.* The slave trade ameliorated, 168. Public library established, *ibid.* Treasury, mint, and custom-house erected, 169. Extraordinary increase of commerce, *ibid.* Effects on the people and city, 171. The king raises the colony to a kingdom, and confers on it distinct armorial bearings, 173. First symptoms of disturbance at Pernambuco, *ibid.* Its object and progress, 174. Suppression and execution of the leaders, 176. Acclamation of Dom John, 178.

Birth of Dom Pedro, 179. Padre Antonio d'Arrabida, his tutor, 180. Emigration of the royal family, and behaviour of Dom Pedro, 181. Suspicious death of his tutor Rademak, 182. Disposition and early propensities of Dom Pedro, 183. Marriage, 185. Takes a decided part in the revolution in Portugal, 186. Violent conduct of the Portuguese troops in Brazil, 188. Alarming consequences apprehended, 189. Timidity and irresolution of Dom John, 190. Energy and decision of Dom Pedro, 191. Strange display at the theatre, 192. The king resolves to return to Europe, *ibid.* Electors convoked, *ibid.* Description of the Alfandega, 194. Speech of the English merchants to the king, 195. Conduct of the electors assembled there, 196. Atrocious massacre of the citizens, 197. Fate of individuals, 198. The place abandoned in horror ever since, 199. Departure of Dom John, 200. Melancholy contrast between his arrival and departure, 201.

Question of the independence of Brazil agitated, 202. J. B. d'Andrada. Oppressive conduct of the Portuguese, who recall Dom Pedro, 203. Effect on the Brazilians, 204. Mineiros and Paulistas show first and highest spirit, 205. Address presented by Andrada, 206. Dom Pedro determines not to return, 207. Composes a constitutional hymn, *ibid.* Attempt to seize him at

the theatre, 208. Portuguese troops take a menacing position on the castle-hill, 209. Brazilians assemble at the Campo de Sta. Anna, 209. Oblige the Portuguese to pass over to Praya Grande, 210. Dismal state of Rio, 211. Portuguese troops compelled to embark, 212. Plots and conspiracies in Brazil, 213. Prompt and vigorous conduct of Dom Pedro—rapid journey to Villa Rica, and its effects, 214. Admiration and enthusiasm of the people for his person, 215. Confer on him a new title, *ibid.* Conduct of Portugal, 216. Cradle of Brazilian liberty, 217. Bahia occupied by European troops, 218. Female heroism, 219. Dom Pedro acclaimed Constitutional Emperor, 220. Inconsistent with the declarations to his father, 222. Lord Cochrane invited from Chile, 223. Proceeds against Bahia, and blockades it, 224. Inhabitants driven from the town, 225. Bold attempt to burn the fleet, 226. Madeira evacuates the town, and is pursued across the Equator, 227. Horrible event at Para, 228.

Coronation of Dom Pedro, 230. Picture at the academy, 231. Meeting of the Constituent Assembly, 233. First enlightened proceedings, 235. Spirit of democracy begins to appear, 236. Dissolution by military force, 237. The Andradas and other members seized and exiled, 238. Anecdotes of the Andradas, 239. Emperor promises another constitution, 243. Accepted by the people, *ibid.* Burning of the theatre, 244. Independence of Brazil acknowledged by Dom John, 245. Congress of Panama, 246. Magnificent but impracticable conception, 247. Cause of the war with Buenos Ayres, 249. Monte Video seized by Portuguese, 251. Absurd adulation of the Cabildo, *ibid.* Petty warfare—Fleet in the Rio de Plata—Weak pretensions to blockade, 253. Evil consequences of the war, 255. Emperor embarks for St. Catherine's, 256.

Empress taken alarmingly ill, 257. Means resorted to for her recovery, 258. Affecting anecdotes of her amiable disposition, 259. Revolting conduct of her camareira, 260. Death and

funeral, 261. Sensibility of Dona Maria, 262. Spontaneous testimonies of the love which all classes bore her, 263. Conduct and character, 265. Children, 269. Death of her first child attributed to the English, and strange impressions of the eldest sons of the house of Braganza, 270. Emperor returns to Rio, 271. Battle of Ituzango, 272. War against human civilization, 273. Peace made but not ratified, 274. Legislative body assembles, 275.

Irish and German soldiers, 277. Strong prejudices of the Brazilians, 278. Treatment of the Irish, 280. Means taken to exasperate them, 283. Mutiny among the Germans at S. Christovão, 285. Spreads to the Praya Vermelha, 288. Murder of their Major, 289. Sanguinary orders of the minister at war, 290. Insurrection of the Irish at the Campo d' Acclamacão, 291. French and English marines landed, *ibid.* Cruelty of the Moleques, 292. Number of persons killed, 293. Irish embarked on board ships of war, 294. Kind conduct of the emperor to them, *ibid.* Horrid state in which some were found, 295. Sent home, 296. Disposal of those left behind, 297. German soldiers tried as mutineers, and one executed, 300. Intrepid conduct, 301. Emperor visits the English admiral, 302. Dismisses his ministry for their conduct, 303.

Peace with Buenos Ayres, 304. Disappointment and vexation of the people at Rio, 305. Disastrous effects of the war, 306. Treatment of foreign officers in the service, 307. Death of Dom John, 308. Emperor abdicates in favour of his daughter, 309. Rapid composition of the Portuguese constitution, *ibid.* British ambassador the bearer of it to Europe, 310. Birth and baptism of Dona Maria, and why so called, 312. Marriage with her uncle contemplated at her birth, *ibid.* Conduct of Dom Miguel in Portugal, 313. Revives the obsolete cortes of Lamego—Abolishes the new constitution, and is proclaimed king, 315. Anger of Dom Pedro, and curious indications of it, 316. Sends Dona Maria to

Vienna, 317. She stops at Gibraltar, and proceeds to England, 318. Treated as queen, but her ambassador not acknowledged, and why, 319. Situation of Brazil on our arrival, 320.

Emperor's baptismal day, 321. British chapel, 322. Obstacles opposed to its erection by pope's nuncio, and his strange proposition, 323. Different conduct of the Bishop of Rio, and his curious argument, 324. First edifice raised for reformed worship in South America, 325. Opening of chapel, 326. Assault on the windows, 327. Present neglected state, 328. Strange compound of liberality and prejudice in a Brazilian writer, 330. Obstinacy of mules, 331. Choleric driver, 332. Festival on the eve of All Souls, 333. Dramatic exhibition, 334. Visit the church of St. Francisco on All Souls' Day, 335. Miracles wrought on the living, *ibid.* Moorish customs in chapel, 336. Treatment of the dead, 337. Church of Candelaria, 338. Revolting appearance of the Rosario, 339. Convent of S. Bento, 340. Library, 341. Anecdote of Dom John, 342. Convent of S. Antonio, and tomb of General Forbes, 343. Refectory and library, 344. Beautiful site of the nunnery of S. Theresa, 345. Faith in the protection of Boa Viagem, shaken by an accident, 346. St. Domingo chapel for blacks—Sta. Rita for malefactors, 347.

Nunnery of Ajuda, 348. Mode of communication with people outside, 349. Attend the profession of a nun, 350. Particulars of the affecting solemnity, 352. Levity of the Brazilians present, 357. Recolhimentos for misconducted wives, 358. For female orphans, *ibid.* Commutation of tithes, 359. Very injurious to the present clergy, *ibid.* Episcopal establishment, 360. Brazilians hostile to monastic institutions, 361. Proposition in the chambers for marriage of the clergy, *ibid.* Benedictines own many houses in Rio, and are kind landlords, 362. Supposed hostility of the minister of the interior to the clergy, and why, 363. Rather a friend to the character of the church, *ibid.* Irmandades, 364. Their great

utility and extensive charity, *ibid.* Native clergy, why not learned, 365. Admission of blacks to holy orders, 366. Extraordinary contrast with our West Indies, *ibid.*

Bishop of Rio, 367. Invited to dine at his palace, 369. His simplicity and urbanity, 370. Library, 371. Anecdote of Southey's History of Brazil, 372. Temperate and studious habits of the bishop, 373. General character of the clergy, 374. Abridgment of the number of holidays, 375. St. George and St. Patrick, *ibid.* Great Patron, S. Sebastião, celebration of his festival, 376. Fire-works and wax candles, 377. Enormous expense, 378. Brazilian observance of Sunday, 379. Sometimes work, but never indulge in intemperance, 380. Greatest violation of Sabbath by American and English sailors, 381. Sebastianists, 382. Origin of sect, 383. Prophetic disciples, 384. Number and character in Brazil, 386. Introduced to one, *ibid.* Strange bargain of Sebastianist shopkeeper, 387. Curious document, 388.

Establishments for education at Rio, 389. Military academy, 390. Officers of the army and navy taken from the humble ranks in life, 391. School of medicine, *ibid.* Meet a European friend at the hospital of the Misericordia, 392. Immense establishment, supported by voluntary contributions of the irmandades, *ibid.* Singular usage, confined to this hospital, 393. Universal admission, 394. Lunatics, *ibid.* Cemetery, and mode of interment, 395. Number of patients and complaints, 396. Medical education, 397. No prejudice against dissection, 398. Not often practised, and why, 399. Physicians no fixed fees, 400. State of health at Rio, sometimes disturbed by marsh fevers, 401. Alarm of people, and clergy refuse to attend, *ibid.* Ascertained to be common fever, 402. Small-pox very fatal, 403. Sciatica, bobas, communicated by singular contagion, *ibid.* Bichu, 404. Doubtful cause, 405. Prickly heat never leaves some till they recross the equator, 406.

Lock-jaw and worms in the head, 407. Poison by human hair, *ibid.* Lime and dirt, 408. Elephantiasis, 409. Various symptoms, *ibid.* Frightful effects, 410. Enormous tumours, 411. Unnatural appearance of a negro at the Misericordia, 412. Remedies peculiar to the Brazilians, 413. Negro champooing, 414. Bolsa das cobras, *ibid.* Cupping with cows' horns, 415. Extraction of bichu, 416. Black cock, *ibid.* Evil eye and extraordinary amulet, 417. Number of medical practitioners, *ibid.*

Academy of fine arts, 418. Picture of the coronation, 419. Its fate, *ibid.* Students, 420. National museum, 421. Indian remains, 422. Puerile models, 423. Fecundity of Brazil in objects of natural history, *ibid.* Dawn of literature, 424. Works of native authors printed at Rio, 425. Geographical anecdote, *ibid.* Fifteen periodicals at Rio, 426. Character of some, 427. Aurora, Analista, Malagueta, 428. French paper attacked by them all, 430. "Noticias Particulares" of Journal do Commercio, *ibid.* Correspondencia—curious mode of libel, 431. Examples, 432. Certificate of baptism, 434. Singular exposure, 435. Public library, 436. Elegance and liberality of the establishment, 437. Catholics not enemies to knowledge, 438. Lancastrian schools, *ibid.* English and Portuguese mode of writing, 439. French taught with Portuguese, but not English, 440. Remnant of former ignorance, 441.

Advantages of Rio harbour, 442. First extraordinary exportation of the English blankets, warming-pans, and skates, 443. Uses to which they were applied, 444. Interesting appearance of Custom-house quay, 446. Stamping, 447. Mode of increasing officers' salaries, 448. Proper and spirited conduct of French consul-general, 449. Imports, 450. Exports, 451. Commercial treaties, 452. Number of foreign vessels in the harbour present a fine spectacle, 453. Money and accounts, 454. Copper the only metallic circulation, 455. Mint, 456. Diamonds for sale, 457. neglect of precaution, *ibid.*

Extraordinary increase of the city, 458. Obstructions to improvement and salubrity, 459. Numbering of houses, 460. Lighting with gas, 461. Creaking carts, 462. Population of Rio very uncertain hitherto, 463. Usual rates of calculation not applicable to Rio, and why, 464. French, 466. English, 467. Probable amount of present population, 468. Manners of the people, ministers, men of rank, and ladies, 469. Shopkeepers, 470. Make vows in danger, 471. Brazilian menage, 472. Negro improvidence, *ibid.* Association of trades—glass and tea, barbers and musicians, 473. No beggars nor unfortunate females ever seen in the streets, 474. Foundlings—singular advantages of slaves when illegitimate, 475. Amusements, Passeio Publico, barbarous taste in shutting out the sea-air, 478. Botanic garden, improperly so called, 479. Plants from Ile de France and Cayenne, and tea from China, 480. Drink it at the garden, 482.

Theatre visited with a judgment for sacrilegious dilapidation of church, 483. Why endeared to Brazilians, 484. Lotteries, *ibid.* Post-office, mail, and mode of delivering letters, 485. Mistakes and inconveniences, 486. Corrupt administration of justice, 487. One tribunal not mercenary, 488. Curious anecdote, *ibid.* Police, only natives, seen intoxicated, and generally arrest the wrong persons, 489. Onze lettras, an offence at Rio, why, 490. Execution of criminals, 491. Mode of saving their lives, *ibid.* Anecdote, 492. Funerals, 493. Revolting mode of depositing the body, 495. Wax tapers, 496.

Supply of water from Corcovado, 497. Ascend it with some friends, *ibid.* Cataract and aqueduct, 499. Carioca, and old inscription, 500. Name given to Brazilian cockneys, 501. Commotion among the black water-carriers, 502. Fountain of the Mareccas, 503. Another supply from Tijuca, visit it with a friend, 504. Chalybeate well, *ibid.* Magnificent cataracts, 505. Water con-

veyed to Xafariz, in the Campo de Sta. Anna, 507. City requires further supply, *ibid.* Meat at public matança, 508. Prejudice against mutton, 509. Extraordinary use of it on the Rio de la Plata, 510. Fish, *ibid.* Rumours of an enormous and voracious kind in the bay, 511. Excellent pão de trigo, or wheaten bread, 512. Mandioca and feijão, 513. Mindoubi and fedagosa, *ibid.* Berries of three kinds of myrtle, 514. Other fruits, 515. Capsule of the passion-flower, 516. Bananas and Catalonian wine, 517. Caxas, or cachaça, a kind of rum, 518.

Birth-day of Dom Pedro d'Alcantara, grand gala at the palace, 519. Attend at the levee, *ibid.* Palace prepared and painted—imperial arms of Brazil, 520. Supporters, 521. Liveries, 522. Guard of honour, 523. Mode of introduction to the emperor, 524. His son, a fine interesting boy, 525. Inconvenience of a clergyman's gown, 526. Melancholy death of our young friend, *ibid.* English cemetery at the Gamboa, *ibid.* Emperor approves and purposes to establish similar ones, 527. Monument and epitaph, 528.

NOTICES OF BRAZIL,

In 1828 and 1829.

I will follow your advice in my communications to you. I will go to a new country with a mind unbiassed by any previous account, and set down things for your information as they strike me personally, and while the impression is recent. "What mine eyes have seen," as old Gerard has it, I will detail from my own experience; and what mine eyes have not seen, I will endeavour to supply from the oral communications of those intelligent persons for whom I have letters. Fortunately this latter source of information is very satisfactory. Many of them have been themselves eye-witnesses of every thing that has past since Brazil ceased to be a mere

province and became independent—that is, since it was worth inquiring about.

One inconvenience, however, may result from the mode you prescribe to me. You must expect to receive much information which is anticipated by my respectable precursors, and in a manner superior to what my crude communications can offer; but I will endeavour to glean for you as much as possible that is new, and this perhaps will not be very difficult in a young country, just starting into political existence, where every progressive year is an historical record of a new state of things.

When I arrived at Portsmouth to embark, the town was full of Portuguese emigrants, who had been concerned in the affair of Oporto, and then taken refuge in England. While walking on the ramparts, I met sundry groups of them; they were in general very meanly dressed, looked hungry, squalid, and dirty; and had I seen English soldiers in such a plight, I should say they were in the last stage of disorganization and despondency. But not so these men; they were, generally speaking, in high spirits, talked with volubility and animation; and their dusky visages were occasionally lighted up with hope and deter-

mination. They were, moreover, surrounded with groups of females of the place, who were teaching them English; and they seemed delighted with the attentions of their fair instructors. A party of the men asked me some questions as I passed by, and entered into conversation with me. They talked of proceeding to Brazil, and I expected to have met them again. Neither I nor they were then aware that this was also a sealed country, and its people still more hostile and prejudiced against them than their own. They certainly seemed a fine body of young men, and their fate very severe. They had already suffered great hardships and privations, and were at that moment endeavouring to exist in the dearest town in Europe, on a vintem, or about three half-pence a-day, which they told me was all they had for their subsistence.

The Galatea frigate had been appointed to convey us to Brazil; and at nine in the morning of August 26, 1828, we embarked at the Sallyport. One of our companions attached to the embassy was a young gentleman, the Hon. Mr. Stanhope, whose health was very delicate, and whose friends had fondly hoped that the bland and temperate climate of the country would restore him.

His mother and brother had come with him to Portsmouth, and now stood on the pier to see him embark. By an effort of strong minds, they endeavoured to conceal the appearance of those feelings which a melancholy presentiment had impressed: but though apparently calm, and even cheerful, I shall never forget the expression of maternal agony in the countenance of his mother when she turned away after her last farewell; it was prophetic of the event—she was doomed never to see him again.

We found the frigate taking in water from a vessel along-side. This was effected not by the tedious process of casks; but the vessel was a floating reservoir of fresh water, from whence it was conveyed by pipes and pumps to a similar one in the hold of the ship. This mode, which I now saw for the first time, seemed a great improvement on the former practice, not only in saving time, but in preserving the quality of the fluid. I remember, in my early sea voyages, in a merchant ship, our water was in a cask on deck; from whence it was drawn by a little wooden pump, which every one applied to his mouth when he was thirsty; and as one cask was drunk out, another was set in its place.

The water soon became hot and turbid, and contracted a flavour of wood which no process could deprive it of. That which we used in our present voyage acquired no bad taste, and when it became disturbed and discoloured, it was passed through a filter of gravel and charcoal; so that we had it perfectly cool, limpid, and sweet during the whole of our voyage between the tropics. About 11 A.M. we got under way with a favourable breeze at south-east, accompanied by a transport full of convicts, which happened to weigh anchor at the same time.

The next day we passed Admiral Blackwood and the experimental squadron, forming a fine object, standing before a favourable breeze, and attracting the close and undivided attention of our friends on board. Some trials of skill had been made lately between vessels of this squadron, which were as eagerly witnessed in the nautical, as the races at Newmarket could have been in the sporting, world. Songs were made on the occasion, which were sung on the forecastle, in which the winning ship was called the "Saucy" something, and seemed to excite no small degree of envy among our crew, who threatened in good verse, to "take the shine out of her" on the next occasion.

On the 29th I saw, for the first time, Mother Carey's chickens. These little birds are about the size of thrushes; but resemble martins in their shape and flight. They are brown, with white bellies, short forked tails, and long pointed wings; but are particularly distinguished by a hook, formed by a sudden bend of the tip of their beak. They fly along with uncommon rapidity, wheeling and skimming over the surface of the surge, with a lightness and flexibility which is singularly elegant. They sometimes disappeared suddenly, entering the breast of a wave, like a martin into a sand bank; and they are endued with such an amphibious nature, that they frequently remain half an hour under water without reappearing. They feed on the wing, like swallows, and were so familiar, that, like them, they seemed to love the haunts of men, in the solitary deep; and followed the ship, flitting close under the cabin windows, and within a handspike's length of the side, with a seeming sense of security, justified by the event; as sailors entertain for them a superstitious respect, and, I am told, never injure them. When the elder Mr. Sadler attempted to cross from Ireland to England in a balloon, he fell into the sea, about mid-channel. He was

LIBRARY
OF THE
BOMBAY
BRANCH
OF THE
ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY

Procellaria Pelagica.

immediately surrounded by a number of birds of this class, attracted, as he supposed, by some fragments of his provision in the car of his balloon. Though nearly in the dark, out of sight of land, and almost suffocated with the waves, he felt, he told me afterwards, a kind of social comfort in the company of these familiar little birds, which surrounded and followed him like chickens in a farm-yard. In the Western Islands, where we afterwards touched, they most abound, and they kill them in quantities for their oil. They are so plump, that the islanders merely draw a candle-wick through their bodies, and it becomes so saturated with the liquid fat, as to form a lamp without further process. Their appearance at sea is supposed to foretell a storm; and if they are not always the precursors, they are generally, I believe, the companions of one; as they are seen in the strongest gales, topping the ridges of the wave, and following its undulation close to the surface. It is for that reason they are called by ornithologists "the stormy petterel."* I send you sketches I made of two, one in the act of flight, and the other lighting on something floating on the water. We this day passed a French frigate, the

* Procellaria pelagica.

Pallas, of sixty guns, for Brest or Toulon. She was visited by our boat with an officer on board. The captain received him very politely, and offered him refreshments; but took, or affected to take, no interest in our ship or her destination, as he asked no questions. She was distinguished by her broad milk-white flag, which floated on the breeze like a sheet of snow.

We next day fell in with the Lisbon packet, and lay-to to speak to her. A boat which we sent on board brought back the captain, who reported, with seeming satisfaction, that the affairs of Portugal were daily more and more involved—that Dom Miguel had fallen out with his mother, and two separate parties were forming, between whom the Constitutionalists were again raising their drooping heads. He seemed to speak the sentiments of the English residents at least, in Portugal, which were decidedly hostile to the present order of things. We availed ourselves of the opportunity to write home. Such meetings of our countrymen, in the midst of the lonely ocean, are as cheering as they are momentary. They form an unexpected variety to the dismal monotony of our lives, and a link of communication with the dear friends we have left behind.

Early next morning, a whale was seen at some distance from the ship, blowing and spouting water; immediately after, a fish called a thrasher, sprung to a considerable height out of the sea, towards the whale, and seemed to attack it. The unwieldy and defenceless monster appeared as if incapable of giving effectual resistance to its active foe, and rolled and tumbled about in considerable agitation, as long as they continued in sight. The sailors on the forecastle, who were enjoying the spectacle, informed me, that the appearance of a whale in this latitude was rare, and was occasioned, according to their theory, by the thrasher, who sometimes attacks it among the polar ice, and pursues and persecutes it down to the equator. Nor is this account of the sailors altogether fanciful: writers on natural history affirm that they frequently surround the whale like bull-dogs, and bait him to death with their sharp teeth. They have even been known to tear a harpooned whale from the ship's-side, and drag the body to the bottom. The genus, however, of this formidable fish is not well ascertained; Old Fabricius, who calls it *balænarum tyrannus*, supposes it to be a grampus,* and Pennant the long-tailed shark.†

* Delphinus orca. † Squalus vulpes.

We this day passed Cape Finisterre; I was in hopes to have seen, at least at a distance, this celebrated promontory, the *Finis Terræ* of the ancient world, beyond which it was not given to man to explore—where all was mystery and chaos—but it was not visible. We stood away from it, and kept a large offing, to avoid the calms always felt when a vessel passes near it.

The next day, September 2, was beautifully fine and temperate. The thermometer stood at 69. A number of grampuses seemed to enjoy the balmy season, and came tumbling and rolling about our vessel, as if they were performing feats of agility for our amusement. A boat was sent out to take a survey round the ship, and she appeared floating on liquid emeralds, the sea was so exquisitely clear, green, and lucid. The men were exercised at their guns, and went through all the evolutions of a sea-fight, now repelling, and then boarding their enemy. I followed their advance and retreat, to the different parts of the ship, and felt like the man in Homer, whom Minerva takes under her care, and leads by the hand unhurt, through the midst of the battle. Like him, too, I could find no fault with the evolutions, for it was a bloodless

encounter. One thing, however, struck me as among the inconsistent acts of humanity, in which our erring nature delights to indulge: it was intended to shoot balls at a sham vessel, placed at some distance, but this was omitted. There was a sick man on board, and with a kind consideration for his state, they would not fire, lest the explosion should disturb his head; while the exercise in which they were engaged had for its sole object, to make the crew more expert at knocking out the brains of other people.

On Thursday, September 4, a gale sprung up at north-east, and increased our way to ten knots an hour; but it changed to south-west, and we were obliged to make the first tack since the commencement of our voyage. A small bird, of the motacilla kind, was seen in the chains, and it was pursued by the midshipmen, who wished to cage it. It never attempted to leave the ship, but flew about the shrouds, alighting at short distances, as if it were incapable of continuing long on the wing. It is not easy to conceive how such a creature, whose capability of flight seemed so limited, and who hopped about like a small bird in one of our hedges, could have traversed an extent of ocean, so many hundred miles

from any land. There is certainly something mysterious, and hidden from our eyes, in the movements of some birds. I do not wonder that the Romans made them the prime source of their omens and auguries.

On Sunday, September 7, the weather was so violent that we could not have public service, and we exercised our devotions in our own cabins, in which we were inundated by the surge. The sea made its way into all the berths on the weather side, including mine, and saturated them with salt water. It was necessary to have the lights caulked and boarded up, the carpets taken off, and every thing turned out into a drier place; and I lay in my damp cot, exceedingly sick, suffocating, and comfortless, which state continued all night and next day.

On Tuesday, September 9, the gale subsided into light baffling airs, and we were all on deck, looking out for the land of Porto Santo. Two large vessels appeared on our lee beam, and we conjectured they were part of Dom Miguel's squadron, proceeding to Madeira, where we hoped to arrive along with them, and be eye-witnesses to the events which were likely to follow: they were, however, at too great a distance, with hulls down, so that we

could not ascertain if they were ships of war. I passed a considerable part of the night on deck, watching the rising constellations of the southern semicircle of the ecliptic, which were, in the clear atmosphere of our present latitude, singularly brilliant and beautiful. The whole figure of Scorpio was now high above the horizon, its vast tail glittering with starry joints, extending to the length assigned by Ovid, and designating the memorable spot where Phaëton was turned in his celestial enterprise.* Mars appeared in the bow of Sagittarius, as large and brilliant as Venus, and exhibiting an appearance so different from that which he presents in our hazy atmosphere, that he seemed a new and undescribed planet. To one whose eye is made familiar with the visible starry firmament, any change of position presents objects more new, interesting, and beautiful than the finest landscape on the surface of the earth.

This morning, as I was proceeding on deck, I was struck with the dead silence that reigned

* Est locus ingens in geminos ubi brachia concavat arcus
Scorpios, et cauda flexisque utrinque lacertis,
Porrigit in spatium signorum membra duorum.

This, though seldom visible in the horizon of England, was very distinct on that of Rome, where these lines were written, and we were just now in nearly the same latitude.

above, and seeing some of the officers pass up in their full uniform, with very serious looks; presently the deep moans of a man in pain explained to me that a punishment was inflicting. There was something awfully dismal in the thing, and it was right to make it as impressive as possible, by the solemnity of every thing accompanying it; but I shrunk back into my cabin, with an unconquerable sense of sickness and disgust. The idea of corporal punishment of this kind is repugnant to every good feeling of our nature; and it appears to me, that a man so degraded is not fit, and ought not, to associate again on terms of equality with his messmates; he cannot rise to their level, and he only sinks them to his. It is a trite remark, and founded I believe in experience, that "a flogged man is good for nothing;" he has lost that feeling of self-respect, which is the most powerful moral restraint, and he never can regain it. It will not now be said, that it is an indispensable auxiliary to good discipline. In many services it is altogether abolished, and I cannot believe that our brave soldiers and sailors are so refractory and incorrigible as exclusively to require the humiliating punishment of stripes and blows, which other nations think too

degrading to inflict. Indeed it is, comparatively speaking, falling into great disuse in our army, and not found at all, as I have been informed, to injure the service: it is to be hoped it will soon cease in our navy also. On board the Galatea, several minor punishments were resorted to by the humane commander, to mark disapprobation for petty offences, and they seemed an effectual substitute for flogging. A man with his hammock was ordered aloft, and he was obliged to stand with his bare feet on the thin rattlings of the shrouds, for half an hour. It was like the picketing of a cavalry regiment, and seemed to make the sufferer effectually sorry for his fault, and tired of his punishment. I found another, one day, pacing up and down the quarter-deck, with his hammock on his shoulders, and he was ordered to move about there for an hour, while all his messmates were enjoying themselves below. He, too, before the expiration of his time, seemed heartily tired, and not likely to repeat the offence for which he was punished.

Our latitude this day was 33° 13′ north, and our longitude 15° 44′ west; so that Porto Santo was only thirty-four miles distant. We were all straining our eyes to catch a glimpse

of it, and several conjectures and positive assertions, ending in wagers, were made by the sharp-sighted, that they saw land in different directions. One of our officers, who was to our crew like Linceus to the Argonauts, for like him he "was gifted with the sharpest eyes,"* affirmed, in a manner that defied all contradiction, that a dark mass on the horizon, behind which the sun was setting, was the island of Madeira: before night, however, it vanished; and it was ascertained to be one of those deceptive fog-banks which present an outline, as sharp and well-defined as the ridge of a mountain. Our clear-sighted man, nevertheless, had reason for this conjecture; for if those dense mists now assume the appearance of islands, Madeira itself was for several years considered nothing more than a dark cloud.

Next morning, when I went on deck, I was delighted with the phenomenon of actual land, which was a sight no less pleasing than novel to a landsman, who, for the first time in his life, for sixteen days in succession, had contemplated nothing but the expanse of waters. It consisted of little more than several large rocks rising from the sea: two of the larger

* Ὀξύτατοις ἐκέκαστο ὄμμασι. Apol. Rhod.

have between them a narrow channel with perpendicular faces at each side; they seemed as if they had been originally one, and rent asunder by some convulsion of nature. An enterprising commodore, whose name I forget, led his squadron through this chasm, to the astonishment of the nautical world. The rocks were called by the sailors, The Deserters, and so set down in our charts. I inquired into the reason of the odd designation; some said they were so named because they had been a place of banishment for runaway soldiers; others, that it was an appellation figuratively applied to the rocks, which seemed to have *deserted* from the island of Madeira: but, on referring to authority, I found they were noted in the Portuguese maps as *Ilhas desertas*, the barren islands. This was another proof of the propensity of our nation to alter the names of every language to some nonsensical similarity of sound in our own. Our maps are full of such mistakes. We set down Yeni Hissari, or the New Castles, at the entrance of the Dardanelles, as Cape *Janissary*. We call the Archipelago, the *Arches;* Corunna, the *Groine;* and Cape Hoorn, so named by Le Maire, who discovered it, in compliment to his native town, we corrupt into Cape *Horn*, and

it affords a standing witticism to nautical poetry.

Next morning we found ourselves lying among one of those archipelagoes of islands, which are thinly scattered over the vast Atlantic. The group consisted of the Deserters, Porto Santo, and Madeira. Porto Santo we distinguished by several conical hills with pointed peaks, like so many sugar loaves floating on the surface of the waters. The hills, however, are connected by a low undulating plain, which we could perceive, on a nearer approach, was cultivated, and several white edifices scattered through it; the greater part seemed totally divested of trees and verdure, but was, as we were told, one vast rabbit borough, these animals having undermined a large portion of the vegetable soil. Almost the only tree growing on the island, was that which yields the gum, called dragon's blood,* which is one of its most important productions.

As this was the first land seen by adventurers setting out from the old in search of new worlds, its discovery is a remarkable æra in the progress of human knowledge. Dom John I. having made an end of the wars in Castile, and

* Pterocarpus draco.

"not finding it convenient," as the Portuguese historians have it, "to abandon his subjects to idleness, he resolved to employ his arms against the avowed enemies of religion." He therefore proceeded against the Moors, and made a conquest of Ceuta, in Africa. From this circumstance an important benefit accrued. He was accompanied by his active and enterprising son, Prince Henry, who here met and had an opportunity of conversing with many intelligent persons, merchants and others, who had seen and explored remote regions, and who in person had visited many places, before known in Europe only by distant rumours. From their relations, his curiosity was excited to a great degree; and on his return to Portugal, he retired to Algarves, and established an arsenal and observatory, near Cape St. Vincent, from whence he purposed to despatch ships of discovery, to explore such places as he had heard accounts of. Here he fitted out vessels, and selected Joâo Gonsalvez as the commander of the expedition. Gonsalvez was distinguished as the first person who introduced the use of artillery into ships, and was esteemed a captain of great knowledge and enterprise. With him was associated Tristâo Vaz, and they set sail in the year 1417, to proceed to Cape Bajador, on the coast of

Africa, the then *ne plus ultra* of European discoveries. They were soon, however, driven out of their course by a wind they could not stem, as Barros quaintly says,—"because their ship was so small, and the sea so great;" * and falling upon an unknown land in the midst of the ocean, they ran for the shore, and took refuge in the first harbour that presented itself, and hence they named it *Porto Santo*, from the protection it afforded their shattered bark. Instead of prosecuting their voyage, they returned to Algarves when they had refitted, and reported to their patron the discovery they had made. Prince Henry immediately sent out colonists and the fruits of Portugal; and in two years the island was a flourishing colony, yielding all the products of the continent, which were soon assimilated to the soil and climate.

It is a fact, which seems hardly credible at the present day, that Porto Santo was well inhabited for some time before they attempted to visit Madeira, only seventeen leagues distant. The people saw it before them, but were afraid to venture to explore a spot which the credulous and superstitious fancies of the age had clothed in extraordinary and mysterious circumstances. "The vapours," said Barros, "sometimes raised

* Por o navio ser tam pequeno, e o mar tam grosso.

by the humidity of the soil, and the multitude of trees, were so great, that at one time it appeared to the colonists as a dark cloud, and at another as land." This doubtful and visionary appearance of the coast gave rise to the most extraordinary reports, which are detailed more at length by Alcaforedo. "There ran a rumour among the Portuguese, that off the Island of Porto Santo, towards the north-east, there usually appeared a perpetual obscurity, which always extended itself from the sea to the sky, and never diminished, but continually appeared in the same manner. This every one knew who lived at Porto Santo, and they judged it miraculous, if not impossible, to go and return from the black cloud; but they who should venture, would of necessity lose their lives by their rashness. This obscurity was called an abyss. Some affirmed that it was the mouth of hell, and were upheld by the opinion of divines, who offered to prove, from argument and authority, that it was so. An historian asserted that it was the island anciently called Cipango, which God had mercifully created and hidden in the clouds, to protect the Spanish and Portuguese bishops, who had retired thither from the persecution of the Moors and Saracens;—that it was therefore directly contrary to the Almighty's

pleasure to endeavour to make a clearer discovery of what he had concealed, and divers prophecies were quoted which forbid, under severe penalties, a further search into these mysteries."

To us, where we then lay, these early impressions did not seem at all improbable, in an ignorant age so addicted to superstitious fears. The summit of the island appeared covered with a dark dense cap, which sometimes descended to the sea, concealing the outline of the land like one vast extinguisher. It is highly probable, that before the island was inhabited and the atmosphere cleared by felling trees, and other efforts of human industry, in altering the quality of the soil, that the mists and exhalations were much more dark and frequent. At this day the whole island is often obscured, and it is likely that at that period it was seldom visible.

We lay all day hovering between the islands of this group, contemplating the various phases which Madeira assumed, and recurring to the extraordinary circumstance of the first impressions it made on the mind of man; but in the evening a breeze sprung up, which carried us close in with it. From the eastern extremity of the island runs a long ridge of rocks, for ten or twelve miles, presenting an exceedingly rugged and bold face to the sea, interrupted by chasms

and precipices; behind it rose Madeira, enveloped in dark clouds, over and through which the sun appeared, giving the most curious and picturesque features to every object. At the extremity of the ridge was what seemed a perforated rock, forming a vast arch, through which the rays of the sun shone, and presented a perspective like the inside of an illuminated cathedral; and from hence to the island was a bridge of bold breakers and rugged rocks, the front of which, as we advanced along, gave the most magnificent and varying mass of light and shade. Having passed this, we came opposite the west face of the island, which rose before us in a grand acclivity, covered with green woods and white villas, as high as the dark cloud which enveloped its summit, drawing a sable veil across its countenance, and, like the Turkish women at Athens, suffering the lower features only to be visible. Our breeze now died away as the sun set, and we were forced to remain in our present position till the morning.

Immediately as the twilight set in, a large fire was kindled near the base of the hill, at the village of Santa Cruz, and suddenly a number of others blazed out in succession. We could not discern that they were lighted in the houses, and they seemed much too bright for candles, so we

supposed they were signals spreading over the country, like bale fires or the fiery cross. As we were utterly ignorant of the state of affairs, we generally concluded that the island was still in possession of the Constitutionalists, who had supposed our vessel to be a Portuguese frigate, which indeed she resembled in her unpainted exterior, and had sent forth their signals to put the island on the alert. In this opinion we were confirmed by a merchantman, with whom we spoke shortly after. He had met a fishing boat, who informed him, he might approach the island in safety, as all was quiet.

As we slowly advanced next morning, all our glasses were directed to the shore, but we could discern no blockading squadron, and we came to a conclusion that it had arrived and returned home *re infecta*. At length, however, we discovered to the left of the town, some ships lying at anchor under the land, which we soon perceived to be ships of war; and on the largest, a ship of the line of eighty-four guns, the Portuguese admiral's flag was flying at the mast head. We were now divided in opinion as to what this portended; some of us, unwilling to abandon an opinion which we wished to be true, affirmed that the navy had joined Dona Maria's cause and army, and were now lying together in

amicable communion under the island. We soon perceived among them an English frigate, the Alligator, and a signal was hoisted for the captain. In about an hour his boat was alongside, and Captain Canning came on board. He first informed us how matters really stood, and that the island had surrendered a few days before without striking a blow.

Our boat was now ready, and I set out with a party of friends to visit the island. We passed the Brazen Point, so called because the face is formed of a red copper-coloured stone, and the green-sward with which it is covered resembles an exudation of verdigris. As we approached, the town of Funchal lay before us resembling a vast blanchisserie; the white patches of houses spread over the face of the hill, like linen put out to bleach. We were challenged by a sentinel from a lofty insulated eminence, called Leeir or Loo Rock, which stood out in advance several hundred yards from the shore, and was surmounted with a fortress and battery. He shouted down to us with a speaking trumpet, to know who we were and what we wanted; and on answering, we were directed round to the officers of health, whom we now saw approaching in a country boat. They came alongside, but remained at a short distance beyond the supposed

influence of infection, while they interrogated us as to what passengers we had on board, and whether there were any sick. The answers they wrote carefully down, annexing, that we "had pledged our word and honour for the truth of them." They all spoke English remarkably well.

The shore where we were about to land had a very singular appearance; the face of the rock was columnar, formed of regular basaltic pillars, some perfectly straight and erect, but others crooked and bent, as if the incumbent mass above had pressed on them while yet they were soft, and they had yielded to the weight, like those of Boshala at Staffa, and similar ones at the Giant's Causeway. The shore was strewed with large joints, having convex and concave surfaces, and originally pentagonal and hexagonal sides, but the angles were generally washed and rubbed off by constant attrition in the flow and reflux of the tide. In some places the pillars reposed on strata of red ochre, which had a very bright and vivid colour.

As there was no breakwater or pier yet erected, we were obliged to pass into one of the numerous shore boats that were plying about, which the boatmen shoved through the surf, and soon had us high and dry on the beach. Besides

the fortress we had seen on the top of the rock, the landing place is commanded by a long low fort, many of whose embrasures were little above the level of the water; they were fronted with basalt, and some of the shelving faces of the columns were adapted to the expanding sides of the aperture, like those of Dunluce Castle, at the Giant's Causeway. We entered the city from the dirty beach by a town gate, which was evidently more for show than use, and climbed up several very steep streets to the house of Mr. Veitch, the English consul.

The residence was entered through a long passage, the front next the street having a very ruinous appearance, as it was the dilapidated remains of an old house. Beyond was a garden filled with palms, bananas, and other tropical trees, and in the centre was the house, dark, cool, and shaded, with all the blinds closed up. The consul was at breakfast, and we disturbed his family, the ladies of which disappeared; but in a short time the table was again replenished, and we had a plentiful breakfast of tea, cold roast mutton, grapes, and figs. The consul confirmed Captain Manning's account of the impotent resistance made by the Constitutionalists. Behind our chairs sat three or four men, who seemed very dejected; one of them was

particularly so. They had been engaged, we understood, in different ways in the unfortunate affairs of the Constitutionalists, and were now in a temporary asylum, in daily apprehension of being sought after. One of them had been an officer of a corps, and seemed most anxious to avail himself of any opportunity to leave the island.

The consul now arrayed himself in his uniform of blue cloth, embroidered with broad gold lace, and proceeded to wait on his Excellency on board the frigate, and we went through the town to see sights. The first remarkable object was a lady carried in a kind of sedan chair. This is a sort of cage slung on a pole, carried on the shoulders of two men, from whence it hung down within two inches of the ground, like a bale of goods on slings between two porters, frequently striking against any projecting stone in the pavement. The lady sat at the bottom, with her knees drawn up, and was covered over with a canopy of embroidered stuff, pendent from the top of the cage, which she could place before her so as to hide her face when she pleased. We met several of these machines, but none of the inmates chose to resort to this precaution. The very odd-looking carriage, used by the first

Peasants of Madeira conveying Wine.

people in the island, is certainly not a very dignified mode of conveyance — a lady sitting squat, in a very uneasy and awkward position, at the bottom of a cage, within a few inches of a dirty street, and looked down on by every passenger.

The streets are exceedingly steep, as they all run up the side of the hill, and are paved with small stones set edgeways in the ground, which are not only very sharp, but very slippery to walk on. Hence they are painfully laborious to climb up, and dangerous to ride down. We saw some Spanish horses drive very hard down one of them, and expected every moment that they and their riders would be precipitated; but, with wonderful sagacity, the horses set their hind against their fore feet, whenever they arrived at a part unusually steep, and without further effort frequently slided down the inclined plane, many yards at a time, by the velocity they had acquired. The burdens are drawn up by a small breed of bullocks, which are universally used for draught. They are yoked, two a-breast, and a slide capable of holding a cask of wine is attached by cords; a peasant, with a long pole and a goad at the end of it, leads them by a cord passed through a perforation in the tip of one of their horns, and

another walks beside the machine with a large rag of cloth steeped in water; this he occasionally throws under the slide, which is thus kept wet by passing over it, and it glides smoothly and evenly along. The cattle are a very small mountain breed, of a mouse-coloured brown. They are encouraged by the long drawling and continued cries of the driver, and seem very gentle and tractable.

The peasantry are robust, but exceedingly dark in their colour, and their breasts, and other parts exposed to the sun, are nearly as black as those of a negro. This is supposed to arise from the moorish origin of many of them who came from Algarves. They are generally corpulent, and wear white cotton shirts, which, among the poorest of them, seemed as white as snow. I have remarked, that there is something in the air of southern climates, which is favourable to the process of bleaching. I have never seen cotton or linen reduced, by repeated washing, to that dingy yellow so common in our cold and foggy atmosphere; the most ragged worn fragment is as white as the new web of cloth. Their drawers are short, and their boots rise half way up their legs, leaving an interval of dark naked skin up to the knee. Every man has his jacket thrown over his shoulders, and carries in his hand a

long pole. But the most remarkable part of his dress is a small conical cap of blue cloth, lined with red; this scarcely fits on the top of the crown; a sharp spike rises from the summit, and at the sides are two little red claws, by which it is seized and drawn down as far as it will go on the head. This cap is a singular and characteristic thing, peculiar, I am told, to the people of Madeira, and worn by the women as well as by the men; I saw them take it off by the point, to salute any friend they met, always adding to the salutation, "God prosper you." The women are remarkably plain and sallow, and when a little advanced in life, singularly ugly and repulsive. Their faces have the shape and character of those of baboons, projecting jaws, retiring foreheads, and high cheek-bones; their breasts are long and flabby, and frequently hang down to an extraordinary length, and these natural deformities are increased by a squalid negligence of dress. The younger are more attractive, and attentive to their persons. They have generally coal-black hair, which they tie in a club behind, close to their heads, leaving two large locks on their cheeks. Their heads are covered either with the pointed caps just described, or with beaver hats, with a broad band and buckle, in which is stuck an ostrich or

other feather; a pellerine, or short cloth mantle, covers their neck, scarcely reaching beyond their shoulders, and their gowns are dark cotton. Some of these girls were so comely, that it is hardly conceivable how they could degenerate into such objects as their mothers. They are very prolific, and almost every married woman has from six to twelve children.

One of the streets we passed through was full of beggars, who lay along the walls in the sun like the Lazzaroni of Naples, but were very inferior to that robust race. They were of different ages and sexes, and some of them not badly clothed. It is usual on one day of the week to distribute alms at different houses, and all these idlers were collected here for the purpose. These useless members, which the better part of the community now consider a perfect nuisance, were about to be more profitably disposed of. Joaõ Carvalhal, the most opulent man on the island, had planned a workhouse, to which they were all to be sent, and there employed, as in England, in some occupation of industry. But this enlightened and benevolent man was a constitutionalist—compelled to abandon his property and his plans for the improvement of the island, and is now a fugitive in London.

It was Saturday, and market day; and we

walked through the market-place, to see the produce of the country in the commodities exposed for sale. They principally consisted of fruits; figs black and green, bananas in bunches, apples, pears, large red onions, and peaches; these last were as hard as stones, and are always brought to market in that unripe state, in which the people prefer them. There were venders of grapes of several qualities, particularly a large, dark brown, fleshy fruit, which we cultivated in the palace garden at Constantinople; and a small dark one, called *tinto*, the clusters of which grow to such a size I was informed as to weigh 20lbs. But I was particularly struck with the abundance of fine potatoes, which were exceedingly good, and plenty in the island. Grapes and potatoes rarely thrive together; the heat and dryness necessary to mature the one, are very inimical to the other; but in this fertile and favoured island, where every stratum of elevation gives a different soil and climate, all plants and fruits grow up and prosper together. Among the roots which I saw in the market, was that of the arum,* the only esculent species of that very acrid tribe; and even this is so much so, that if tasted when raw, it

* Caladium esculentum.

immediately blisters the mouth. The acrid particles, however, are volatile, and dissipated by heat in the process of boiling or baking. I saw it growing in a garden outside the town, where a large space of ground was covered with it. The leaf was larger and less pointed than that of the *A. maculatum,* but it had all the lurid and forbidding aspect of our poisonous, but common, cuckoo-pint. Not only the tuberous root, but the leaves are eaten, and called Indian kale.

Among the articles of apparel for sale were yellow shoes of tanned unblacked leather, of goats' skin, resembling yellow morocco, and generally used in the island. Another manufacture of leather was goats' and calves' skins, dressed whole and inflated, preserving the shape and size of the animal, and intended to carry water and wine. They were generally borne along for sale by boys, who swing them about on the tops of poles. Here, as well as in the east, the mode of preserving wine at this day is the same as in the time of the apostles, and explains the allusion of the Evangelist.*

They make at Madeira two kinds of wine,

* "Neither do men put new wine into old bottles, lest the bottles break," Matt. ix. 17. The word in the original is ἀσκὸς, which literally signifies an inflated skin.

white and red; the first is too well known to require description. It is the produce of a grape supposed to have been originally brought from Cyprus, and planted on the island by Prince Henry on its first discovery. But the change of soil and climate has altogether altered its qualities, for it resembles modern Cyprus wine in nothing but colour. The latter is like Tenedos wine of the Archipelago, stronger than claret, but not so strong as port. The fruit producing it is the small dark grape we saw in the market; it leaves a deep stain on paper, or any other substance which imbibes the juice, and is for that reason called *tinto*. The soil producing the best wines is the poorest and most stony, and in that respect resembles some of the vineyards of the Rhine, where the vine grows among dry shingles, with scarcely a particle of mould. The vintage is in September, and was just commenced when we arrived. The grapes are thrown into a vat, and pressed out by the feet of bare-legged peasants, who get in and trample on them, where they are seen all stained with the red juice, affording another exemplification of scriptural allusion.* The wine does not mature till after a certain age, and is generally

* "Wherefore art thou red in thine apparel, and thy garments like him that treadeth in the wine vat?" Isaiah lxiii. 2.

sent on a voyage round the world to please our English palates. It is distinguished, like claret, by degrees of excellence, according to the estate on which it is made. Negro Mole, Verdelha, and Buse are the most celebrated. About 30,000 pipes are annually produced.

The Portuguese are said to be expert coopers, and we saw instances of it. Some wine was purchased by our purser for sea store, and the coopers were casing the casks in the street, under the window of the merchants' store where it was brought. The staves were jointed, bottomed, and hooped below with great expedition. The open space above was then inverted on the wine cask, and reinverted, with it inside. Shavings were crammed into the space between to keep all tight, the open staves were circled with iron hoops, the top laid on, and when the last iron hoop was driven home, all the parts closed up with the most exact correspondence; and the whole large cask was jointed, put together, and finished in the completest manner, while we were looking on, with a speed and dexterity creditable to the workmen.

Among our sea store were bananas and citrons, which, for the first time, I saw in their native state. The banana is of two kinds,

differing a little in shape and size.* Its fructification is as perfect an exemplification of the sexual system as that of the palm. The fruit is produced on a large spiral branch, issuing from the side of the stem of the tree. Over this branch are suspended the male blossoms, on a long bending footstalk, consisting of several series of stamina, corresponding with the number of fruit on the branch below. Each series is covered with a dark purple petal. As the fruit ripens the footstalk lengthens, the lower petal opens and exposes the stamina, which impregnate the corresponding fruit, and then drop off. These are succeeded by the next, and the process goes on till the whole branch is impregnated. When the last petal with its stamina falls away, this is supposed to be complete, and then the fruit is ripe for pulling. The whole branch of bananas in this state is called *cacheio*, and sells for about ten vintems, or fifteen pence. The fruit is at first very crude, and filled with a milky and rather acrid juice; but when hung up for some time in vendas or shops, it gradually mellows and ripens. It always, however, retains a heavy and disagreeable smell, resembling those strong and repulsive vegetable odours which often warn

* Musa sapientum, and musa paradisica.

you that the plant or fruit is deleterious. This flavour seems to reside in the skin, which is pulled down at each side, leaving the esculent part of the fruit covered with a white downy substance, twice the size of a man's thumb. It is the great food of the labouring classes, particularly of the negroes of Brazil, and is considered exceedingly wholesome and nutritious. Among the higher ranks, it is sometimes served up at the dessert, and eaten with cheese, which gives a certain sapidity to its sweet but mawkish taste. When cut transversely, the division of the seed forms the sign of the cross; and the Portuguese think it a profanation so to divide it, because it severs in two this sacred emblem: they therefore cut the fruit obliquely, so that the cross may not be seen. A variety of it, called banana da terra, or plantain, is always roasted and eaten with sugar. When smoke-dried, it acquires a firm consistence, and keeps for a long time. The tree on which it grows is conspicuous by its immense leaves, and it is that which gives the most peculiar and distinctive character to a tropical landscape. It is most abundant in the lower and warmer situations of the country, but so delicate, that it cannot be assimilated to the higher and more temperate regions. Several soft and succulent

stems shoot out from the same root; when one has borne fruit, it is cut down, and succeeded by another.

The citron resembles a very large lemon in exterior. The rind, however, is exceedingly thick, and the interior is solid and fleshy, not juicy and pulpy, like the lemon variety. It was first brought from Media, in the east, and hence its botanical name.* It has now, however, travelled to the most distant parts of the western world. I saw in a large shed behind a shop the process of its preparation:—The fruit was first split and boiled, and steeped in salt water for a certain number of days. It was then finally boiled in sirup, which every where penetrated its pores, and it came out of the caldron quite green and transparent, in which state we purchased it.

The houses of the town are generally large and strong, with long blocks of hewn stone, ornamented with mouldings, round the doors and window cases; they look, however, exceedingly neglected and out of repair, and though full of inhabitants, resembled the ruins of good edifices, that had been deserted. Frequently a large building, with a fine exterior of hewn

* Citrus medica.

stone, was without roof or floors, and the lower part occupied by sheds and shops; and there seemed, on the whole, a total absence or disregard of that attention to neatness and comfort which characterizes an English town.

There was one circumstance, however, in which it possessed an eminent advantage, and that is, the abundance, purity, and excellence of its water. This fluid, generated by the clouds which constantly brood over the summit of the island, sometimes descends in immense and dangerous torrents, rolling down huge basaltic pillars, detached from the rocks above, and carrying with it the houses which stood in the way of its sweeping inundation. One of them formed a broad bed through the centre of the town, and was the avenue through which much mischief was periodically inflicted on the inhabitants, particularly in October, 1803, when some streets were swept away, and about seven hundred persons drowned. To obviate similar accidents, two massive walls have been built on each side of the bed of the torrent, running a considerable way up the sides of the mountain, beyond the extremity of the town; and through this the greater part of the water discharged from the clouds, is conducted safely to the sea. This fine and useful work is crossed

by several bridges, and on one side, for a considerable distance, is planted with platanus and other trees, forming a pleasant walk. While the town is thus secured against the effects of a great inundation, the streams of several smaller rills are led in different directions through the streets, and there is a perennial current of pure and limpid water continually gurgling down every avenue, a source at once of health, cleanliness, and beauty, in the driest and hottest seasons. I have never seen a town so favoured, but Brusa, in Asia Minor, at the foot of Mount Olympus.

We now proceeded up one of the steep streets, and after climbing, with much labour, under a burning sun, we arrived at the extremity of the town, and had a full view of the face of the mountain above, the city below, and the sea beyond it; the whole forming a singularly beautiful prospect. Higher up the summit of the mountain was riven into several deep chasms, the sides of which were clothed with wood; the wood consisted of chestnut, walnut and pines, among which were scattered orange, lemon, the laurel which produces camphor, and the palm which yields the gum called dragon's blood. Other palms of great size spread their feathery fronds above the lower vegetation;

we were told they yielded no fruit, but were not the less important, as they were used as an indispensable badge of Palm Sunday, and borne by every person on that day in large branches, whence the day is so properly called Dominigo de Ramos. Among the original trees of the island were cedars of a magnificent size, but they have become very scarce. Above the woods was raised a canopy of dark dense mist, veiling the highest ridges, and descending into the chasms with an infinite variety of light and shade. On the confines of darkness stood the convent of Nossa Senhora d'el Monte, the highest inhabited place on this side the mountain. It was situated on an eminence between two deep ravines, embosomed in magnificent trees; presenting, with its white turrets and battlements, issuing from the dark mist, a very striking object. Scattered all round it were the quintas or country seats of the more respectable merchants. They are called quintas because they originally reserved one fifth part of the produce as rent to the landlord. These covered all the face of the mountain at different elevations, and were resorted to by the inhabitants of Funchal, when their business in the town below was concluded.

In the windows and verandas were goldfinches and canary birds, which were found on the

island in great abundance when first discovered. But of all the aborigines, the lizard tribe was the most numerous; we saw them every where of different sizes and colours; all the dry walls were alive with them, peeping from every aperture and over every angle, with their bright and intelligent eyes. We were sometimes attracted by the rustling of leaves, and perceived it was occasioned by the beautiful green lizard, which Horace describes as producing the same effect in Italy, and startling his timid mistress.*

The soil of the country was a rich reddish earth, mixed with lava, pumice, and vitrified scoria, which was seen every where covering basalt or whinstone, called by the natives *pedra viva.* Some huge fragments of this stone, still preserving their ordinate angular form, appeared in the beds of the torrents, but more generally the sharpness was rounded off by rolling and attrition. At some distance, at Antonio da Serra, was the huge basin called the Crater, three quarters of a mile in circumference, once the outlet of inflammable matter, indicating, with other decided marks, the volcanic origin of the island.

Returning again into the town, we heard the

* "———————— Virides rubum
Dimovere lacertæ."—Ode xxiii. lib. 1.

bells of several churches and convents ringing a merry peal, and every where around us the explosion of great guns. We saw, planted in the front of one convent, a number of cannons, made of cut-down gun barrels, which several boys were discharging in succession; while flags were hoisting and flying in all directions. This we heard was the ceremony of the eve of a festival, which was to take place next day, with a grand procession up to the church of Senhora d'el Monte, to return thanks for the deliverance of the island from the anathematized Constitutionalists; and the lights we had seen blazing the evening before, were not the signals of those victorious men as we supposed, but preparatory indications of the approaching festival in honour of their total defeat.

These processions to our Lady of the Mount take place on all occasions, from the exceeding sanctity of her shrine and image, in this place. When the island was first discovered, a statue was found on the mountain of this uninhabited island, and must, therefore, have been brought not by human hands. The convent was built on the spot, and the statue enshrined placed over the high altar of the chapel. On all occasions of public calamity she is carried out to arrest its progress, and was of singular service on the

awful day of the inundation, which would have drowned the whole island had she not appeared; but it instantly stopped as soon as her image was presented to it. When she does not go abroad, pilgrimages of people are continually ascending to visit her at home. Sailors are particularly attentive to this duty; whole crews are often found begging in the streets below, and are then seen, headed by their captain, climbing up the hill with the offerings they have collected.

We returned from our excursion to dine with Mr. Borrit, an English merchant, a pleasing and intelligent gentleman, from whom we obtained much local information, particularly on the events which had recently occurred. In the evening we sent on board nine bullocks, with abundance of water, wine, and fruits, and then proceeded on board ourselves, in a shore boat. It had a keel, bent up and curling over the bow, and bound by a stay, like the bowsprit of a ship. It was high and dry on the beach when we all got into it; it was then launched a considerable way through the shingles and surf, and in a short time we were on board our frigate, which was standing on and off to receive us, and before dark we were again on our way.

The last person who left our ship was Captain

Canning, and we took final leave of this fine young man, whom we were doomed never to see again. He was the son of the late minister, and though engaged in a totally different sphere of life, had much of the talent and vivacity of his father. He early obtained the command of a ship of war, and he not only appeared, but I believe he really was, the youngest captain known in His Majesty's navy. He was appointed lieutenant in February, 1823; commander in 1825; and post-captain in 1826; thus rising from midshipman to his high station in four years. He was tall and slender, with light hair, and a fair complexion, and had the youthful look and air of a midshipman who had just passed for lieutenant; and his good humoured and unaffected manners were in keeping with his appearance. He also informed us of the incidents which occurred on the arrival of the Portuguese squadron to the coast, of which he was a spectator. We soon afterwards heard at Rio of his premature death. He was highly popular with every one at Madeira, particularly with the English, who greatly sought his society. He was one day engaged to dine at Mr. James Gordon's, whose quinta was about a mile and a half from Funchal. He had heated himself by violent exercise at rackets,

and when he proceeded to Mr. Gordon's house, he entered the room which he used to occupy, and having put on his morning gown, he went down to a large tank in the grounds, where he undressed himself, and plunging in, he sank never more to rise with life. Having waited dinner for some time, Mr. Gordon proceeded in search of him, and coming to the tank, he found his clothes on the edge. A young man was immediately called, who was an expert swimmer; and he, having dived down opposite to where his clothes lay, discovered his body at the bottom, in about fifteen feet of water; it was lying in a bent position, with the head resting on the knees. A cord was immediately let down, and being fastened to his arm, the body was drawn up; but the spark of life seemed totally extinct, as it was supposed he had been half an hour in the water. Expresses, however, were instantly despatched for medical attendance, and it was found extremely difficult to procure it, in the moment of emergency. It happened that all the Portuguese physicians were implicated as Constitutionalists, and had either escaped or were incarcerated. Application was immediately made to the governor to permit two of the most eminent who were in prison to proceed to the place; but the governor

refused to liberate them; at length, at the pressing instance of the English, and a sufficient security being given for their immediate return, they were suffered to go with a guard. It was now, however, too late, the time when it might have been possible to restore suspended animation was wasted, and all means and appliances were useless.

The death of this fine young man, in the prime of life, and the vigour of health, so sudden, and as some seem to say, so extraordinary, excited in the island a strong sensation. There were not wanting of one party, who affirmed it was a judgment visited on him for favouring the escape of so many offenders; and of the other, who affected to say there was something mysterious and suspicious in the manner of it, as if he had been struck by some unknown hand while in the water, as I myself have heard it insinuated; but nothing can be more unfounded than such an idle rumour; unfortunately, the cause of his death is too common—apoplexy, arising from collapse, occasioned by sudden and violent change of temperature in high excitement. Instances occur every day of people incautiously rushing into a cold bath, when violently heated by exercise, and sinking never to rise again; and

to a case of this kind, I was myself a witness. A soldier had just returned from a review, on a hot day, and the moment he was dismissed, he stripped himself, and I saw him plunge into the river, close by the parade—he never re-appeared, till his lifeless body was brought up by a drag, which was procured for the purpose. He was a very strong athletic young man, and a remarkably good swimmer.

Having had here and elsewhere many opportunities of inquiring into the affairs of the Constitutionalists, I shall detail to you some of the circumstances attending the unfortunate issue of their attempted defence; premising a few particulars of the past and present state of the island.

The ancients took much of their information of the islands off the coast of Africa, from the real or supposed voyage of Hanno, the Carthaginian; who, about 570 years before the christian era, was sent by the state to explore the coast beyond the Pillars of Hercules, and proceeded as far as a high mountain, called *Currus Deorum*,* beyond one of the great promontories which project into the Atlantic. This promontory Ptolemy places on this side of the

* Θεὼν ὄχημα.

equator; but whether it was Bajador, Blanco, or Cape Verde, is very doubtful: some affirm that it was the latter, and that our colony of Sierra Leone is placed on this chariot of the gods. Five groups of islands are mentioned within these limits:—Cerne, Insulæ purpureæ, Fortunatæ, Hesperides, and Gorgades; but the exceeding vague, indistinct, and contradictory manner in which they are described by different writers, gives no information, except that they were known to exist somewhere along the coast, scattered in the great Atlantic. It appears to me, however, that Madeira and its appendant island, Porto Santo, were best known, and were the μάκαραι νῆσοι of the Greek, and the Insulæ Fortunatæ of the Latin writers, and not the Canaries, as is generally supposed. They are described as existing in the Atlantic, at the extremity of Mauritania, or Morocco, about 600 miles from the coast, and *two* in number, according to Sebosus and Plutarch, all which localities agree with Madeira and Porto Santo. One was called Ombria, from its mists and humidity, abounding in trees resembling ferula, or fennel, and was filled with large lizards;* permanent natural characters which now peculiarly distinguish Madeira.

* Arbores similes ferulæ, lacertis grandibus referta.—PLINY.

They were exuberant, temperate, and wholesome, producing every kind of fruit; exempting the inhabitants from ordinary diseases, and insuring to them an extraordinary degree of longevity. This fertility and salubrity also form the exact character of the islands at the present day. Sertorius, according to Plutarch, when he heard them described, was eager to proceed thither from Lusitania, the modern Portugal, in the vicinity of which they were more immediately situated: so that the Portuguese then, as well as now, were the proprietors. For a series of centuries, however, they were lost to Europe, till again discovered by an adventure, as romantic and extraordinary as any recorded in history, and told with such minuteness, and by so many historians, that one can hardly refuse to credit it.

The person who first detailed the account, was Francisco Alcaforedo, esquire and gentleman of the bed-chamber, to the intelligent Dom Henry; and who was himself one of the adventurers who explored the island. On his return, he drew up the particulars for his patron, by whom his papers were carefully preserved. I have not been able to ascertain whether they were published

at the time; but long after, Francisco Manoel incorporated Alcaforedo's account in his history published in 1660,* and it has been generally followed. I have seen a French translation, printed in 1671, and an English, in 1675; and since then, almost all persons who visit Madeira allude to it in their accounts. You would think me unpardonable if I passed it over in silence, so I give you an abridged translation of the original work.

In the reign of Edward III., an English gentleman, named Lionel Macham, fell in love with Arabella D'Arcy,† a lady of his own country. Her friends disapproved of the connexion, and had interest enough to have him placed in confinement; and in the meantime compelled her to marry another, who brought her to Bristol. When the lady was thus disposed of, Macham was liberated; and he, stung with the oppression and injustice he had endured, called together some gallants, his friends, and detailed to them his

* Epanaf. de var Histor. par D. Francisco Manoel de Mello, 1660. He says, that Alcaforedo's account was written, "Com igual singeleza que individuacão, cujo original eu guardo como joya preciosa, vindo a minho mão par extraordinario caminho."

† There is some variation of the names, in different accounts; the gentleman is called Robert Macham, and the lady, Ann Dorset, D'Alfaret and Arfet.

wrongs. They entered at once into his feelings, and promised to assist him in carrying off the object of his love. They proceeded to Bristol, and their plan was to seize a vessel in the harbour, and run for the coast of France. To this end they took a pleasure boat, and daily were in the habit of sailing round the vessel, that their approach to accomplish their design might not be a subject of suspicion or alarm to the crew.

The lady was, in the meantime, apprised of their proceedings, and agreed to meet them at a solitary place on the banks of the Avon, and there embark. She was usually attended by a retinue of servants, but by the contrivance of her groom, who was in the interests of Macham, she eluded their vigilance. The horse she rode was kept without water for three days; and on the day appointed, as he approached the river, his impatience could no longer be restrained; he rushed forward with an impetuosity with which the others could not keep pace, arrived alone, and the lady was received on board the shalop which was waiting for her, before her attendants could come up or interfere to prevent her. To aid this plan, they had selected a day on which they knew that the officers and

crew of the ship were feasting on shore, on some festive occasion, so that it was easily seized by the party and carried off. When the circumstance was known, all the ships in the harbour were ordered in pursuit of the fugitives. "But," says my author, "what noise the recital of this adventure made, not only in Bristol, but in all England; what descant was made thereupon, or what punishment the actors deserved, let others tell, for we do not intend to particularise them in our relation."

To avoid pursuit, Macham and his friends altered their course in the night, and in a day or two found themselves out of danger; but the wind now changing, blew violently, and drove their bark into the Atlantic, without a possibility of gaining the coast of France; and for thirty days together, they ran through "the vast and dangerous deserts of the ocean," hourly expecting death; when one morning, at sun-rise, they found themselves close in with a land, high, craggy, and covered with trees. On running near the shore, they did not see any trace of human beings; on the contrary, an immense number of birds of all sizes and descriptions, settled on the masts, yards, and decks, with an appearance of curiosity, and

sense of security, as if they had never seen or been molested by man before. They selected for their landing place, a beautiful spot, overshadowed with a large cedar tree, beside a clear rivulet; and here the lovers, with part of their friends, reposed and refreshed themselves for thirteen days, while the remainder staid on board.

On the fourteenth morning before day, one of those impetuous tornadoes, which still burst suddenly from the summit of the island, and rush down the side, drove the ship from her moorings, and pursued her for two days, till she was wrecked on the Barbary coast, and all the crew who escaped on shore were made slaves. When it was light in the morning, those who remained on the island looked out, and no where perceiving their vessel, concluded she must have perished, from her shattered state, and her weak crew. This consideration deeply affected the lady, who now gave herself up to despair; and after three days silent affliction, during which she never spoke, she expired. Her lover could not survive her loss, and at the end of five days he too died, requesting to be buried in the same grave, under the tall tree they had chosen as the place of repose. The

stem, by his direction, was hewn into a cross, and an inscription cut on the trunk, requesting that future Christians, who should find this place, would erect a chapel on the spot, in which prayers might be offered up for the repose of the unhappy lovers.

The seamen now built a shalop for themselves, out of the abundance of timber they found every where; and, having killed birds and beasts for sea store, they set sail to endeavour to return to Europe; but the same wind that had driven their companions before it, overtook them also, and they, too, were forced on the coast of Morocco, and like them were made slaves. In the prison in which they were confined, they met a Spaniard, named Morales, to whom, in their mutual communications, they related their adventures, and the discovery of the new land. Morales was an intelligent and skilful pilot—made himself acquainted with all the particulars, and treasured up the information in his mind.

Some time after, a large sum of money was left by Don Sancho, youngest son of Ferdinand, king of Castile, in the spirit of the pious charity of the age, to redeem christian slaves in Africa from captivity; and a vessel was sent to fetch them home. Morales was among the

ransomed, and he returned in the vessel; but the war between the Spaniards and Portuguese had not yet ceased; the ship was captured by the latter, and Morales was brought to Portugal. Having mentioned this extraordinary story, and the discovery he had made while a prisoner, he was immediately sent to Prince Henry, as one by whom his information would be highly valued; and detailed to him, at his arsenal at Algarves, all the particulars. The enterprising prince without delay fitted out an expedition to complete the discovery, consisting of a vessel well equipped with sails, and a shalop propelled by oars, and gave the command to Gonzalves, who had discovered Porto Santo. Morales, and several Portuguese gentlemen, embarked with him, among whom was Francisco Alcaforedo, then an esquire of the Prince, who has detailed the narrative.

When they arrived at Porto Santo, they saw on the distant horizon, the portentous black cloud, which Morales immediately conjectured to be the land he sought for; but the timidity and superstition of the rest were so great, that before they attempted to proceed on the discovery, they resolved to wait for a quarter of a moon, to see if the phe-

nomenon would disperse, or alter its shape: it did neither, but remained the dark, undefined, mysterious object they first saw it. The crews had determined to return without tempting their fate; but Gonzalves, relying on the sagacity of the Spaniard, set sail in the night, and the next morning they found themselves still nearer the dreaded object. About mid-day the obscurity increased, and the mist extending all along the horizon, presented one vast black abyss, which drew forth outcries of alarm and terror from the crews, and they refused to proceed any farther. Gonzalves now called them on deck, and made them a long speech, appealing to their courage and sense of duty, which roused them to a frantic resolution, and they urged forward their ships with the same desperate determination as a forlorn hope enters a breach. As they approached, they thought they perceived men of gigantic stature, and portentous visionary forms, menacing them; but the sun now suddenly bursting out, absorbed the veil of vapour, and displayed the feature of a lovely land, environed with peaks and rocks, which the mist had magnified and distorted into giants. Having coasted some time, admiring the prospect every where presented, they

prepared to land; but the sun setting, they deferred it till the next day, and in the meantime Gonzalves kept a good look out at night on the strange coast; "for sleep is a rock," says my author, "the more dangerous, because no pilot finds it in his sea-chart."

Next day they landed, and Morales immediately discovered traces of the English, trees notched with axes, and other signs of human labour; but at length they came to the very tree on which the cross was erected, and read the inscription, still legible on its trunk. An altar was therefore immediately raised on the spot, and mass said for the repose of the souls of Macham and his unfortunate lady.

On further exploring the island, it was found entirely destitute of human inhabitants, and the birds so tame, that they had no apprehension of the approach of man, but passively suffered themselves to be taken. The surface was thickly covered with trees, except that in one part was a fine plain, producing nothing but luxuriant plants of fennel. This plain they called Funchal, which means fennel, in Portuguese; and here they resolved to build their future capital. On one spot they encountered a

number of seals, then called sea-wolves, which rushed from a cavern. This place they named Camera dos Lobos, and their enterprising commander took his future title from it; his arms having two sea-wolves for supporters.

During all this time they were under an impression that the land they were on, was a promontory projecting into the ocean from the continent, and part of the coast of Africa; but they now returned to the place from whence they had set out, and having made a complete circuit of it, discovered it was an island.

Having thus ascertained every particular of the state of their discovery, they sailed back to Portugal, to make it known. Gonzalves and his companions were introduced to the king and court, and at a public audience, gave a full account of the circumstances detailed in the foregoing narrative; and, as the most remarkable feature of the island was the vast trees by which it was covered, the king immediately declared it should be called Madeira, or Timber Island.

On the following year Gonzalves returned with a colony, and ran directly for the harbour which the English had discovered, and he

himself had entered the year before; and this he called Porto Machico, or Machino, in memory of the unfortunate lovers. All these places are still designated by the same names at the present day.

Such is the very curious and minute account of the discovery of Madeira, given by a man who was himself an actor in, and eye-witness to, the events which he details. Its authenticity, however, has been questioned, because many writers of credit are silent on the subject; because events are mentioned which must have taken place long afterwards; and because Edward III. died in 1378, and Madeira was discovered in 1420; so that the pilot must have been forty years a slave. To the first, it is replied, that a number of old writers of credit receive it as true. Galvano mentions it as the tradition of Aragon; Hakluyt speaks of it as authentic; Cordeyro details it in his Insulana, and several others notice it as a fact not disputed; but Dom Francisco Manoel de Mello is a host in himself, who says he had the original papers in his possession. With respect to the second, all the subsequent events were obviously added by Manoel to Alcaforedo's original manuscript; and, with respect to the third, we

know that unfortunate slaves have been liberated after a longer confinement. Some of them, manumitted when the English palace at Constantinople was finished, had been fifty years in bondage. To this might be added the ancient tradition of the island. The bay is still called after Macham's name; they preserve there a cedar cross, as the one carved out of the tree; and they show a series of pictures in the government hall, descriptive of the several events of the story. You will decide for yourself, but I am disposed to think you will conclude, that if we were now to claim the island, on the ground of being the first discoverers, our pretensions would hardly be acknowledged, even on the testimony of Alcaforedo.

As Madeira was the first fruits of Prince Henry's discoveries, so it was the first object of his care and attention. He filled it with such productions of other countries, as were not indigenous to its own prolific soil. To this end he sent to Sicily for sugar canes,* and to Cyprus for vines; and they both throve so abundantly, as soon to render his new island famous. The wines still retain their celebrity; but the culture of sugar has

* Arundo saccharifera.

so declined in these latter years, that there is at present but one engenho, or sugar-mill, on the island. Silk worms were also introduced from the east; but notwithstanding the number of mulberry trees indigenous to the soil, the experiment did not succeed, and some few articles of silk wear are manufactured from the raw material imported.

Among the foreigners who were induced to settle in this beautiful island, there was a large proportion of English, attracted either by the salubrity of the climate, or by commercial speculation. So great has been the resort of invalids from the former motive, that the place has been called the "last haven of health;" and the burial ground is full of melancholy memorials of those who fled in vain from their own chill and foggy atmosphere, to this more pure and genial climate. It is now, I believe, ascertained by long experience, that Madeira is no more a refuge to the consumptive, than any other place: when a human being is once struck by that incurable malady, it is in vain to seek for health in any climate; *hæret lateri lethalis arundo,* wherever the stricken patient flies. Its celebrity, therefore, in this particular is nearly passed away. The English, however,

who reside, form a very respectable part of the population. They consist of about 300 individuals, who have established about twenty mercantile houses, and are among the most opulent merchants of the place.

The spirit of intolerance, formerly complained of in Catholic countries, is now fast disappearing. It had been the custom, not only to deny heretics the rites of burial in consecrated places, but to cast their bodies into the sea, as unhallowed things, which the very ground every where rejected. The Rev. Mr. Ovington visited the island, in his way to the east in 1696: an Englishman had just died, and his friends deposited his body in a place of concealment among the rocks—but here it was found out, dragged down, and cast into the water. It should mitigate, however, our horror at such intolerance, if we recollect at how very late a period the penal statute against Catholic funerals was enforced in our own church-yards. In 1770, it ceased in Madeira, and the English residents have not only a large cemetery, but they have built a fine church. It is true that the permission interdicted them from erecting a steeple with bells, but they have ornamented their chapel with a cupola, and they now freely

and publicly exercise the rites of their religion in an edifice as conspicuous and ornamental, as any Catholic place of worship in our own country. It is surely a delightful contemplation to a christian mind, to see the asperities of mutual intolerance thus wearing away, and the spirit of the Apostle's precept beginning at length to operate among all sects, in all countries.

The number of English residents in Madeira seems to have had a considerable effect on the sentiments and intelligence of the rest, who are deemed an enlightened people, deriving, like those of Oporto, much of their character from their intercourse with the strangers. When, therefore, the first constitutional government was formed in Portugal, the people of Madeira immediately adopted it. On the 28th of January, 1821, about six individuals commenced by an address to the governor, which in a short time was increased by above 600 more signatures; but among them no person's name of rank or consequence. In answer to this address, the governor drew down the guns of the fortress to fire on the petitioners, but the army refused to act, and the spirit became general all over the island. The governor, now seeing no alternative, appeared on

the battlements in token of his acquiescence with the public wish—the Constitution was proclaimed, a brilliant illumination for two days and nights succeeded, and four deputies were sent to the cortes at Lisbon. To keep alive the constitutional spirit, the revolutionists sent to England for a printing press, which was the first ever seen on the island; and the 1st of July, 1821, was made memorable by the publication of an insular newspaper, called the "Patriota Funchalense," a thing as novel as it was extraordinary in the annals of Madeira. A counter revolution was now planned, and it was intended that it should explode at the theatre. The design, however, transpired—the house was filled with constitutional soldiers; and the bishop of Madeira, who was known to be the instigator, was arrested. A council of 300 persons was formed, as a provisional assembly, to direct affairs; and a deputation of nine waited on the bishop to communicate to him that he must leave the island. He was accordingly embarked on board an English schooner, and two military officers were deputed to attend him, and deliver him up to the authorities in Lisbon. From that time affairs were conducted quietly, till the counter

revolution in Portugal entirely changed the face of them.

In 1823, an expedition of troops was sent to Madeira, and a commission of magistrates appointed to overawe the island, and prosecute those who had shown an attachment to the late order of things; and the people complained, that though there had been no commotion among them, and that they merely followed the progress of events in the mother country, they were yet objects of persecution. When, therefore, the constitutional system was again proclaimed, it was received at Madeira with great and general satisfaction, and a new newspaper, called "O Defensor da Liberdade," was established to support its principles. Its emblems were, a cap of liberty on a pole, crossed by a sword and a pen, its two most powerful supporters. Its fate, however, is a proof how little their use was understood. The paper was subject to a censorship, and many of the numbers contain long passages marked, as erased. Notwithstanding this, the proprietor was prosecuted and punished for sedition, by the constitutional government, though he had cautiously omitted all the offensive passages, and the remainder of the

paper was supposed to be published with the approbation of the censor himself.

In April, 1827, Jose Lucio Travassos Valdez was appointed governor and captain-general of the island. General Valdez had already distinguished himself in the constitutional cause — was appointed by Dom John VI. to the command of the fortress of Braganza, and had defended it with great spirit, in 1826, against the insurgents who had then risen to overturn the existing government. In May, 1828, news arrived in Madeira that the Constitution was again destroyed — that Dom Miguel was proclaimed absolute king, and the cortes of Lamego substituted for that which had been by law established. He therefore wished to uphold the legitimate system, which he thought it his duty to support— but not to declare himself till he provided every thing necessary for defence.

A census had been taken of the inhabitants in 1822, and it was found that they amounted to 99,600 souls. Since then, an increase was known to have taken place, and the whole were now estimated at 110,000: of whom 25,000 were inhabitants of Funchal. The troops consisted of a battalion of artillery of

the line, of 850 men, disciplined to do duty as infantry, with a company of a regiment of artillery, from the army of Portugal, which had been sent to the island in 1823, and twenty-six field pieces; three regiments of militia of Funchal, Calheta, and S. Vincente, of 1100 men each; with twenty-six forts, batteries, and redoubts in the city, and different parts of the island, mounting 220 pieces of cannon, the greater part of large calibre, and garrisoned by 2000 men. With such means of defence, and the good dispositions of the people, it seemed probable that it could resist any force sent against it.

The general's first care was to visit and inspect his resources. He found the artillery reduced to 200 men, and the militia regiments to a moiety of their complements; the garrisons not half manned, and the guns in a very imperfect state. He raised the regiment of artillery to 500 men, and the militia in proportion; supplied them with new arms, repaired the old as far as circumstances would permit, and reorganized the whole military force, to be ready on an emergency. He established a telegraph, to communicate with distant parts of the island. The Brazilian minister in London wrote to him, apprising him

of all that had happened in Portugal up to the 12th of May; he next day despatched the messenger on to the Brazils, and communicated to the emperor the state of things at Lisbon, and of the measures he was taking to protect Madeira.

In these proceedings he was placed in a very difficult situation. His secretary was a decided apostolical, and in constant communication with the party in Portugal. The bishop of Madeira was returned, and with the other clergy, amounting to more than 1400 persons, who every where insinuated themselves, were labouring to put an end to the Constitution, and counteracting all his measures, before they were matured. But the circumstance that more than all tended to frustrate his preparations, was the premature announcement, in the public Gazette of Oporto and England, that Madeira had declared against Dom Miguel. From that moment an expedition was resolved on, and prepared with all possible despatch, to secure it; and this circumstance perhaps tended more than any other to the reduction of the island, for the force appeared before it was prepared to resist.

As the bishop of Maderia had hitherto preserved a fair appearance, and seemed to take no

part in affairs, he did not yet openly avow himself; but he made use of a characteristic expedient to communicate his sentiments to the people. On the 12th of June, a priest issued from a church into the streets of Funchal with a crucifix in his hand, and, assuming the appearance of an idiot, called all the people round him, and then harangued them as an inspired person. He said he had just spoken to their lord and master Dom Miguel, and whoever wished to save himself should follow him. A sudden commotion of the people, excited by this fanatic, was about to take place: but the general, apprised of it, had the troops immediately under arms,—the rising was suppressed, and the priest committed, by the direction of the bishop himself when his plan had miscarried, to the lunatic asylum.

On the 16th of June, news was brought to Madeira of the efforts of the Constitutionalists at Oporto, and their march on Lisbon: and the general thought that now was the moment to declare himself in Madeira, and he did so in the following manner. Without apprising any one of his intentions, he directed that the chamber of the senate should meet the council of state, on the 22d of June, in order to ascertain exactly what were the real feelings of the people, and

await further orders. About half-past eleven, the regiment of artillery of the line, commanded by Colonel Francisco Manoel Padrone, marched from its quarters to the public square, and immediately the regiment of Funchal militia, commanded by Colonel Antonio Jose Espinola Valdevesso, followed thither, and the area of the cathedral was filled with the park of artillery. It was now mid-day, and the square and streets were crowded with a vast concourse of people, who rushed to see what was going on, without at all knowing its object. Valdez issued from his palace, accompanied by Colonel Joâo de Carvalhal and his staff, and passing along the line, was saluted by the soldiers. He then proceeded to the place where the senate and council had met together, and for the first time announced his intention of proclaiming Dom Pedro and the constitutional charter, and invited them to assist on the occasion. A shout of applause spontaneously burst from all the members, indicating that such was the wish of all the citizens and the corporations which they represented.

The members of the chamber then, preceded by their ensigns, entered the area of the cathedral, accompanied by an immense crowd. The military formed a hollow square,

and from the centre General Valdez read a proclamation, in which he told them the occasion was now arrived which demanded from them the discharge of their most sacred duties. This proclamation was followed by a manifesto breathing the same sentiments — that degenerate men, unworthy of the name of Portuguese, had dared to rebel against the lawful king and his sacred charter; and venal writers, corrupted by a perfidious ministry, had dared to proclaim an *absolute* king, and death to the lawful monarch; that it was resolved to protect this beautiful isle, "the flower of the ocean," from the mania that had seized the kingdom of Portugal; that if it had not been for a few ministers of religion, who, either through error of judgment or wilfulness, had joined some disgraced and obscure demagogues, the island of Madeira would have been the spot, where alone the seeds of rebellion had not germinated.

"When these documents were read, there appeared," said my reporter, "on the face of his excellency, on that of the noble soldiers, and on the whole assembled people, those sweet tears which excessive joy always produces; but when the general himself, assuming the command, shouted out—'Long live Pedro, Maria,

and the constitutional charter!' it would require *three hundred* mouths, as *many tongues*, and a *voice of iron*, to describe the enthusiasm of Madeira!"*

The cathedral was now suddenly illuminated, as if by enchantment, and the constituted authorities, accompanied by an immense crowd, entered it, and joined a solemn *te deum*. Troops of musicians marched about the streets, accompanied by parties of citizens, singing the constitutional hymn; and the evening ended with a grand tea party (cha magnifica) given at the palace, which was splendidly illuminated for the occasion.

It had been the anxious wish of the Constitutionalists, that the English residents should identify themselves with them, and take a part in the defence of the island; and some were well disposed to make a common cause with their friends and neighbours the Madeirese; but the great majority wisely thought they ought not to interfere in the concerns of a place where they were merely strangers and sojourners, so they prudently sent in a formal protest and declaration on the subject.

* Seria necessario ter cem bocas, outras tantas linguas e a voz de ferro, para poder descrever o enthusiasmo Madeirense.

In order to keep alive the spirit and inform the public mind, a new newspaper was set up, called " Flor do Oceano," the Flower of the Ocean, from this famous appellation, as the editor says, which General Valdez had conferred on the island in his manifesto.* The first number was published on the 27th June, 1828, and it is said to be imprinted, " Funchal con licença na officina Britannica." Even this announcement greatly alarmed and annoyed the English, as affording a presumption of their participation, and likely to involve them in the consequences which might ensue. But the turgid and inflated style of this paper; the pompous declarations and mean performances; the promise of mighty things, and the lame and impotent conclusions, would be in themselves intrinsic evidence that the English had nothing to do with it.

It was considered necessary to remove all suspicious persons from places of trust. The secretary of the government was suspended; the bishop was obliged to dismiss his vicar-general; and about twenty persons, including eight or ten ecclesiastics, were apprehended and

* This appellation was derived from the Portuguese poet, Diniz, who calls it " do undoso campo Flor," Flower of the wavy plain.

sent out of the island to Porto Santo. In the mean time despatches were sent off to the provisional council at Oporto, to the Brazilian minister in London, and to the British ministry, apprising them of what had been done in Madeira.

Three days after, an opportunity occurred of trying the sincerity and firmness of the people of the island. A Portuguese frigate, the Princeza Real, appeared opposite the town, and it was at first believed that she was sent with news that all the authorities in Portugal had acknowledged the constitution, and that the insurrection, as it was called, was at an end. While the visitors went on board, the people assembled on the shore, and continued with music, singing patriotic songs, till their return. It was now ascertained that the frigate had brought out officers of the new government to replace those of Madeira and the Azores. It was necessary to send on board again to notify the change that had taken place in the sentiments of the people of Madeira; but every one was afraid to go on such an errand, lest they and the bark which brought them should be seized and carried off. At length Mr. Veitch, the British consul, volunteered his service, and, under the protection of the British flag, went on board, bringing with him the proclamation of

General Valdez, and other documents, declaring the state of affairs on the island. In a short time after the frigate set sail and disappeared to the south. The enthusiasm of the people was so great, that 500 new recruits, and some of them the most respectable men on the island, enrolled themselves in a few hours that evening into a volunteer corps.

In the mean time an insurrection, which had been organizing itself in the north of the island, now broke out. Some ecclesiastics of Porto Delgado, seduced the soldiers of the militia regiment of S. Vincente; and on the 27th, about 300 men, armed with fusils, marched on S. Jorge. In two hours a strong detachment was sent from Funchal by forced marches, who came up with the insurgents in the mountains, killed two, wounded ten, and made about twenty prisoners; and returned in three days to Funchal, bringing with them those whom they found most culpable in exciting the insurrection. As the bishop was known to be the prime instigator, it was thought right to send him entirely from the island. He was therefore directed first to draw up a pastoral letter to the people, exhorting them to observe and obey the constitutional government; and on the 10th he departed, with fourteen of his disaffected clergy, for Oporto.

Two days after, the disastrous news arrived that the general officers had abandoned the forces of Oporto, and embarked for England; and this was confirmed by the Medina, an English corvette, which came in thirteen days from Lisbon; but though it excited the strongest sensation, it only increased their activity in preparing to meet events. An invasion of the island was now naturally expected, and the whole line of coast was examined and quartered, from Praia Formosa on the west, to Machico on the east of the capital; 400 or 500 men daily laboured; new batteries were erected; old ones repaired; and in the short space of twenty days, 120 pieces of cannon, generally of large calibre, and 26 field pieces, were in batteries ready to repel an invader. The troops also shewed extraordinary zeal and apparent resolution; the recruits were eager to render themselves expert in military evolutions; and the new corps of volunteers of Pedro IV. as they were called, who had enrolled themselves on the appearance of the Portuguese frigate, were particularly distinguished for their zeal and dexterity.

In order to make up something like a naval force, they converted two government barges into gun boats, one of eighteen, and the other of twenty-two oars. In a few days they were

well equipped and manned, each carrying a cannon, and the command was given to an American ship captain. One of them was afterwards pointed out to me, covered with a crimson canopy, conveying to shore some of the suite of Dom Miguel's new government. In a few days after they were ready, they were called into service. A corvette and two brigs appeared in the offing, and proved to be a blockading squadron of Portuguese. The young fleet of Madeira was appointed to watch them, as a guarda-costa to the city. On the 31st, however, being the anniversary of the Constitution, the blockading squadron disappeared early in the morning, which the people of Madeira took for a good omen.

They were now in anxious expectation of promised succour from abroad. Though well disposed, the troops were altogether inexperienced, and General Valdez had not an officer to command them who had ever seen service. They hourly looked out for 3,000 men, which they requested and expected would be sent by the ministers of Dom Pedro, and a detachment of experienced officers to command the insular troops. The general applied to the Brazilian consul at Gibraltar, to forward to him several Portuguese officers there who were in the

confidence of Dom Pedro, and other succours, by a steam boat, such as had been sent to Oporto: and a ship was despatched to St. Michael's, to request that two companies of Caçadors, quartered there, should be ordered for the defence of Madeira; but they had been conveyed to Terceira, and afterwards formed part of the gallant garrison which defended that island. They therefore remained without any succour from abroad, and entirely dependent on their own resources. They were left, moreover, ignorant of the intentions of Portugal, except that they expected every day some powerful armament would be sent to crush them. And certainly, for a small island thus to resolve to brave the whole force of the mother country, and hold out the last forlorn hope to an expiring Constitution, which had been every where else utterly stifled, was a bold and gallant resolution.

In this state of suspense and anxious determination they continued for nearly a month, without any communication from Lisbon; when, on the evening of the 15th of August, 1828, the telegraph communicated that there appeared nine ships of war in the offing, but at such a considerable distance, that they could not ascertain to what nation they belonged. On

the next day they were in with the land, and they were known to be a Portuguese squadron of one ship of the line, two frigates, two corvettes, two luggers, and two brigs. The island was now on the alert; the hour of trial was come, and it was to be seen *quid tanto ferret promissor hiatu.* Every man, however, when the alarm was sounded, was at his post, and the best disposition was every where observable.

The wind now freshening and becoming favourable, the squadron formed in line, and about two o'clock bore down on the island, apparently to commence an attack, while every preparation was made on land to repel it. At some distance, however, and beyond the range of the guns of the batteries, the squadron lay to, and sent forward a boat with a flag. An officer was directed to meet the boat, and brought back a summons from Vice-Admiral Prego, commander of the squadron, to surrender the island immediately, or the town would be attacked and razed to the ground. The messenger was dismissed with a peremptory negative, and the threatened attack was hourly expected. Instead of this, the squadron bore away; and when at a great distance, boats were seen boarding the Admiral, from the

different vessels, as if holding a council of war. On the following day they continued at the same respectful distance, cruising up and down before Funchal, while the two insular gun-boats kept a good look out that no launch of the enemy should approach the land. It was a misfortune that the large gun-boats, intended as a guarda-costa to Santa Cruz and Machico, required four or five days' more work to fit them for sea. They would have been afterwards of important service, as the fleet had no armed launches.

While the enemy thus cruised day and night before the town, threatening different points, but doing nothing, the English frigate Alligator, Captain Canning, arrived and cast anchor in the road to Funchal. His coming was hailed with great satisfaction by the British residents. They were naturally in a state of considerable anxiety, their persons and property lying, as it were, between the contending parties; but the arrival of a British ship of war at once calmed their apprehensions, as affording them the means of efficient protection.

Two days after, the English packet came in, having on board a very seasonable though trifling reinforcement. It consisted of eight officers, who had acquired experience by actual

service, and among them a German colonel, of the name of Schawalback. These were distributed among the troops, and commands appointed to them as suited the exigency of the occasion.

After six days' cruising before the town of Funchal, the Portuguese squadron sailed for the north of the island, and on the morning of the 22d it had totally disappeared, having been deterred, it was universally supposed, from attempting to land by the state of preparation in which the island was found, and the spirit and determination of the inhabitants, who now gave themselves up to unrestrained confidence and exultation. So certain were they that the fleet had returned home, that people went about their ordinary business; and several militia men, in the employ of a merchant, were dismissed from military duty, and suffered to assist in loading some ships which were about to sail with their cargoes. But at eleven o'clock the next day the telegraph announced that the squadron was returning before a brisk and favourable breeze, and rapidly approaching the island; and in about an hour after, they were apprised by signals, and the news confirmed by the explosion of artillery, that an attack was made on the fortress of Machico, at the east end

of the island. Machico is defended by two forts, one commanding the entrance of the bay, and the other enfilading it; and as this district had been intrusted to Colonel Schawalback, aided by the officers of experience who had arrived with him, the greatest confidence was entertained, that the forts would be effectually defended; but as the troops consisted of men imperfectly armed and unused to service, General Valdez thought it expedient to proceed thither from Funchal himself, with all his disposable force.

It was generally understood that the Portuguese had no intention of making a serious attempt on this point; but that they had determined to return home and report the island impregnable, having first made an appearance of landing, in order to justify their statements. When they began to cannonade the forts, however, they were instantly abandoned by the garrisons, who were seen flying out of them, at the other side, in the greatest terror and disorder. As far as I could learn at Madeira, but a single shot was fired from one of them, and that not by a soldier. A mechanic, who had been there and left it with the military, returned to pick up something he had forgotten and did not wish to leave behind; and seeing the enemy yet at a

distance, he seized a match, and having discharged one of the guns, he again ran off and joined his companions, who took refuge in the serras of the neighbouring mountains. The enemy seeing no opposition likely to be made, now seriously determined to land; their boats were put out, and about three o'clock in the evening they were established in the abandoned forts. The ground between Machico and Funchal is very difficult, and one point, called Porto Novo, which it is necessary to pass, is deemed utterly impregnable. Here then General Valdez determined to make his stand, and compel the enemy to re-embark, after finding it impossible to penetrate in this direction. Three hundred men of the militia of Funchal were immediately detached to take post at Santa Cruz, but they had to pass along the shore, and two of the enemy's frigates were now lying there within gun shot, and immediately began to cannonade the detachment. On the first discharge they also dispersed, and ran away to hide themselves in the serras; and before seven in the evening all the troops which were collected at Canico, a central point from which they were to be detached for the defence of Porto Novo and other positions, had disbanded themselves and disappeared.

After much difficulty, however, the General collected some detachments, and sent them, with two pieces of field artillery, to the post of Porto Novo, confided to the care of Colonel Schawalback, and the officers lately arrived; and made preparations to attack the enemy in the morning from some advantageous point in the serras. Exhausted with fatigue in making these dispositions, his horse died the moment he dismounted, and he returned to the city to take precautions for its security, where he arrived at five in the morning of the 23d. He found here in the convent of St. Francisco, the Calheta regiment of militia and the corps of volunteers, and having made arrangements to preserve the tranquillity of Funchal, he again departed for Porto Novo. He was met on the way by his aid-de-camp, hastening to town, who informed him, that the military chest had accidentally exploded at that position, by which Colonel Schawalback and others were severely wounded, and two artillery men killed, and that the troops there were in the greatest disorder. While the General hastened to remedy this, he met Schawalback borne to the town, his head bleeding, and nearly scalped by the explosion. He had left the post in the command of Major Figuero, who endeavoured to sustain it; but as the General

advanced, he met the fugitives flying against him towards the city in the greatest disorder. Finding it now impossible to take up any other position, without being flanked by the advancing enemy, he withdrew all the troops towards Funchal.

The town was at this approach defended by a deep fosse, formed by the bed of the Ribeirão, a river which here forms a torrent as it runs into the sea. The banks of this were faced with massive walls, to confine the inundation, as I have already described, and on these, as on a parapet, he disposed of his artillery. Captain Canning, who happened to be in the town, was now accidentally passing, and the General, willing to ascertain how far he might still rely on his men, assembled them together. He harangued them on the duty they owed their country, and the shame of flying before so insignificant a force of traitors and rebels. He then demanded some visible sign from them, and told every man who was resolved to defend his city, to hold up his hand. Immediately the whole seemed inspired by a sudden enthusiasm, all held up their hands with cheers, and took up their posts on the banks of the river. After this scene, Captain Canning proceeded to the Alligator, and there found a

number of officers who had fled from the shore, and were concealing themselves in different parts of the ship, while the wife and children of General Valdez had remained behind, determined to abide the fate of her husband. He thought it right to send these officers out of his ship, and they proceeded to join their respective corps in the city.

The General having now proceeded to inspect his line of defence, found arms piled along the banks of the river, but no men to use them. They had retired to obtain refreshments, as they said, and on various other pretexts; and it was evident that no reliance could be placed on them. A council of war was therefore called, and it was resolved to surrender the place rather than hazard a bombardment, or the excesses committed on a town taken by assault. A manifesto was therefore drawn up, and sent round to the different authorities for their approbation. It notified to the enemy that it was not their intention to make further unavailing opposition; that the people had hitherto acted only under the orders of the governor and the constituted authorities, and were not to blame; and that the General himself was about to retire and recommend that the town should be quietly surrendered. In the meantime, Major Mitchel,

who had landed but a few days before, on his way to the Cape, and had previously known General Valdez, proceeded to the residence of his family, and requested his wife and children to embark on board the Alligator, or some other vessel, as a measure of personal security. She for some time resisted all entreaty to abandon her husband; but being now informed of the state of things, she suffered herself to be conveyed, with her six children, on board the Alligator; and about five o'clock in the evening she was joined by the General, and the officers who had arrived from England but three days before, to defend the island.

Besides these, many of the principal residents and proprietors abandoned the place, and left all their possessions behind them. Among them was João de Carvalhal, whose rents yielded him, I was informed, an annual income of more than 100,000 crowns, and who was distinguished on all occasions, for his patriotic exertions to improve the state of the country. He was accompanied by João de Betancourt, the commendador, and many other opulent relatives. The town, when abandoned by these influential persons, was in a state of frightful anarchy for some time, and the English residents were in hourly apprehension of a general pillage. Cannon, loaded

with grape, had been dragged through the streets; and a mad fellow, in his terror and alarm, seizing a match, discharged one of them at random among his own friends, before the enemy appeared, which fortunately did no other damage than shattering some walls and windows, and wounding one or two persons. An English shopkeeper, of the name of Payne, who lived near the place, was charged as the person who fired this shot; but the worthy man had abandoned his house in town on the morning of the day, and was at the time with his wife and family in the country.

The Portuguese now advanced, and entered without the slightest opposition, and proceeded to disarm the inhabitants. They were well received by a party in the town, whose first feeling was to fire a feu-de-joie to welcome them. They immediately ran to the batteries, and discharged the guns, without waiting to draw the balls, which went whistling about the harbour in all directions. No lives were lost, but several merchant ships were struck with the shot. The succeeding day was past in arresting all who remained on shore, who had not contrived to conceal themselves, and four hundred of the principal inhabitants of the town had either fled or were cast into prison, so that when we walked

through the streets, some days after, they were so solitary and deserted, that we did not meet a human being who seemed of the rank of a Portuguese gentleman. The houses also of some of the Constitutionalists were assaulted and tattered; among others, that of an apothecary, who sold the "Flor do Oceano." They entered his shop, and broke all his bottles.

The Portuguese soldiers were, for some days after, very discontented at not receiving their arrears of pay, and a mutiny was hourly expected to plunder the town and pay themselves; and this, it was supposed, would certainly have taken place, had not the consul of the United States advanced to their commander the sum of three or four thousand pounds. The only foreigner implicated in the affair was a person of the name of Watts, the American, who took the command of the gun-boats. He was liberated, however, and took a similar command in the Portuguese squadron. The English, with great prudence and good fortune, kept themselves entirely disentangled from the affair. Their effects, therefore, in the reaction and confiscation which took place, were particularly respected; and their houses, we saw, were all distinguished and protected by papers posted on them, notifying that the concern was British property.

The fugitives from Madeira were fifteen days on board the Alligator, surrounded by the Portuguese fleet, who made frequent demands to have them surrendered, particularly General Valdez. The situation of Captain Canning was very embarrassing. He was placed between the alternative of seeming to interfere in concerns in which it was his duty to appear perfectly neutral, and the painful necessity of surrendering unfortunate men, who had sought an asylum on board his ship. He adopted the line of conduct which he thought best became the station he held, and the nation to which he belonged. He did not give them up, but availed himself of the earliest opportunity to send them away from his ship. The Jane, a merchantman, was chartered by them for six hundred pounds to take them to England, and she hauled out to a considerable distance from the shore. When all was ready, he sailed through the blockading fleet, who never attempted to molest him; and at night his unfortunate guests, to the number of fifty, were embarked on board the Jane, and proceeded to England.

The promptitude and secrecy with which the expedition had been prepared in Portugal was certainly creditable to the activity and decision of the existing government; and the troops,

before they left the Tagus, were even exercised in all the manœuvres of embarking and disembarking, to inure them and render them expert in the new service in which they were about to engage. The forces, however, amounted only to 1600 men, and would have been altogether unequal to the attempt of taking the island had the opposition been at all correspondent to the means of defence. Indeed it is generally understood, and the Portuguese officers, I am informed, themselves confessed, that their intention had been to return from so hopeless an enterprise, after having made a demonstration of attempting to land. They were equally astonished and pleased at the non-resistance they experienced. On the other hand, the troops of Madeira were, with few exceptions, entirely raw and undisciplined, who had never before heard a shot fired in anger; and previous to the arrival of the packet, General Valdez and his brother were the only two officers who had ever seen service. The soldiers had, up to a certain point, made a show of spirit and determination, and they even talked confidently of availing themselves of the great resources of the island, sending forces to Portugal, and so making it the arbiter of the fate of the mother country: but when

they were unexpectedly attacked at Machico, they were confounded with the explosion of artillery, and seized with a sudden panic, from which they never could recover. General Valdez, to whom I am indebted for much of the foregoing communication, seems to have omitted nothing which was possible with such troops, in the painful and difficult situation in which he was placed. All his countrymen speak highly of his good and amiable character, to which I can add the testimony of my limited knowledge. But they say he wanted energy and decision in the time of need. It is certain, however, that if the troops had done the duty expected from them, either at Machico or at the impregnable defile of Porto Novo, the Portuguese would never have entered Funchal; and he would not now be, with many of his countrymen, exiles from their homes, and suffering the extremities of distress in a foreign country.

The brig of war, the Infant Dom Sebastão, was immediately despatched to Portugal with the news of the important event of the capture of the island, and illuminations were ordered in Lisbon for three days: but in the mean time Dona Maria arrived at Gibraltar, which suspended, it is said, the rejoicings, and the illuminations intended for the third day were

omitted. An expectation had been entertained that she would have proceeded to Madeira, had it not been too late. The Brazilian frigate also, the Isabel Maria, had sailed from Falmouth with a reinforcement of men and officers on board. She went first, however, to Terceira; and when she afterwards arrived at Madeira, the island had been more than a month in possession of the Portuguese.

Immediately on leaving Madeira, we fell in with a breeze, which swept us along all night at the rate of twelve knots, and in the morning we found ourselves 120 miles distant from the island. We were in hopes that we had fallen in with the north-west trade, even in this high latitude; but towards mid-day the wind died away. It was Sunday, and we prepared for divine service on deck. A canopy of ensigns was raised over it as a protection against the sun and breeze, forming sides and a roof. Seats for the men were ranged across, and over the grating of the hatchway or skylight was placed a reading desk, in which the chaplain in his gown officiated. When the congregation assembled and the service commenced, the whole had the solemn appearance of a church. The ship was advancing steadily on the calm bosom

of the sea, scarcely disturbed by any perceptible motion. The rays of the sun passing through the coloured ensigns were divested of their bright glare, and stained the deck with the subdued but vivid hues of many coloured dyes. It was the cathedral of Milton,

> "With storied windows richly dight,
> Casting a dim religious light."

The congregation was profoundly attentive, and the whole service had an awfulness inseparably connected with the vast ocean, and the feeling that we were immediately and visibly in the presence of that God "who spread out the heavens, and compassed the waters with bounds, until day and night come to an end."

With the deep and salutary impressions of such rational piety on the minds of the crew, I was sorry to find still connected those absurd and petty superstitions which formerly rendered the character of sailors so ridiculous, and which still linger among them, while they are exploded from every other class of people. I found that my messmates were firmly persuaded of the ominous import of four things in a ship, and whose occurrence they considered as inevitably connected with disastrous consequences: sailing from port on a Friday; having on board

a black cat; and taking as a passenger either a pregnant woman or a clergyman. Having inquired from several the cause of these anti- particular things, so apparently in- themselves, and unconnected with any supernatural effect, I was generally informed that they were known to be unlucky; but they could assign no reason, except for the last, and that was, that Satan, being "the Prince of Air," had of course the direction of the winds; and as a clergyman is his greatest enemy, he always visits the crew who receive him with all the violence of his elementary agents—calms, con- trary winds, and storms. It will be said that these things, however absurd, are perfectly harmless. But, without insisting on the injury religion sustains by mixing with it such ridicu- lous and debasing notions, or inquiring into how much the service may suffer by having the straight-forward and active duties of a sailor warped and paralyzed by an opinion that he is restrained by some inexorable necessity which the unlucky thing imposes on him; I must affirm that no superstition can be harmless which brings the character and functions of a clergyman into disrepute, and makes him an object of suspicion and dislike to the people he is appointed to instruct.

For the two following days the wind was variable. We were approaching the confines between the unsettled breezes of high latitudes and the steady current of air which always prevails between the tropics; the sun moreover was crossing the equator, and his transit was accompanied here, as well as elsewhere, by stormy and changeable weather; the gales were generally from south south-west, directly in our teeth. On the 17th however we got into what we hoped was a regular trade, and proceeded steadily along in a south-west course. We were now in the latitude of the Canaries and about 90 miles distant from the Isle of Palmas, the most western, which we looked out for, and hoped soon to see on the horizon. A large heron appeared, sailing from the direction in which it lay, and soared and hovered several times round the ship, as if preparing to alight on one of the yards. We were all on the alert to seize this stranger if possible, alive, and cage him on deck: but having accompanied us some time, observing our motions from his airy height, he wheeled round, and like some scout sent out to reconnoitre, he returned to the place from whence he came, with the result of his observations.

If Madeira with Porto Santo were, as I think

probable, the Fortunate Isles, lying off Mauritania, the Canaries must have been the Gorgades, or Island of the Gorgons, who, as Hesiod and the poets said, lived beyond the ocean. They were just known to exist, but too far to the south for any distinct knowledge, and therefore peopled with a race of beings of Fancy's creation—"Gorgons and hydras, and chimeras dire." Pliny says, the inhabitants were women with rough bodies (hirta corpora), and that Hanno brought home two of their skins, which were to be seen at Carthage when taken by the Romans. They were first visited in modern times by the Spaniards, according to Cordeyro, in 1393, before the discovery of Madeira; and as Pliny had called one of his Fortunate Islands Canaria, from the multitude of dogs, they called one of these islands by the same name, supposing it to be the same place. The first discoverer found the islands not deserts, like Madeira and the Azores, but full of inhabitants—the Grand Canary alone having 10,000 people. The women, though not Gorgons, were yet an extraordinary race: one of them, hearing her son was condemned to die in a neighbouring island, plunged into the sea and swam across to deliver him;—"Love giving to this mother," as Cordeyro says, "better wings

than fear gives to coward men."* They are twelve in number, lying off Cape Bajador. The Grand Canary yields the wine called sac, a corruption of sec, dry, because produced from raisins, so highly prized in England in the reign of Elizabeth, and the beverage of Falstaff. I was in hopes we should have seen Teneriffe, towering to the clouds, but we stood too far to the west, and could not catch a glimpse of it.

We had been for some days looking out for flying-fish, and we now saw such vast shoals, that the surface of the sea seemed alive with them to a considerable distance; but the greatest number visible was about the ship. As it advanced, they rose in large flocks from under the bows, and directed their flight from the vessel at each side, as if to escape an object of terror. It is probable that those persecuted little creatures supposed it to be some voracious leviathan, and they sprung from it out of the water, as they do from a bonito or albicore. We remarked that dog fish and others swam close along-side, without any such seeming sense of danger.

* "Dando-lhe melhores azas a esta mãy o amor, que o temor a alguns covardes homẽs." Hist. Insulana. Cap. iii.

The flying-fish* is distinguished by its immense fins, situated immediately behind the gills, which it uses as wings when it wishes to change its element. They generally flew forty or fifty yards, when they met a wave, and plunging into the bosom of it, disappeared. A few rose over the crest, and apparently bathing their wings in the spray, pursued their flight with renovated powers. I know no object of natural history more interesting than a flock of stormy petterels sporting among a shoal of flying-fish, and alternating with each other's element—the little bird descending into the depths of the sea and becoming an inhabitant of the water, the fish ascending to the heights of the atmosphere and becoming an inhabitant of the air. It is one of those exquisitely curious and beautiful links in the great chain of creation, by which we suppose spiritual and we know corporeal beings are connected; forming a regular and insensible gradation of existences, from the ministering angels below God's throne, to the lowest mass of unorganized matter.

A singular occurrence took place in the evening. About eight o'clock a boy had got into his hammock, which was swung on the main deck, opposite a port. He was suddenly startled

* Exocœtus exiliens.

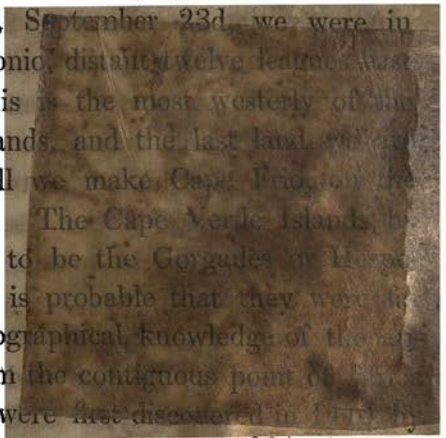
88321

from his sleep by some living thing exceedingly cold, fluttering about his breast, and finally nestling in his bosom. He started out of bed in affright, and searching his hammock, he found a large flying-fish panting and gasping under the clothes. It was immediately brought to me as a curiosity, and I examined and sketched it. It was nine inches long, blue and mottled on the back like a mackerel, the head scaly, and the mouth toothless; the belly was white, flat, and angular; the tail was unequal, the lower division being longer than the upper. There were two membranaceous fins [illegible] shape, about four inches long, consisting of eleven strong ribs, branching off from a point, dividing and subdividing with great regularity as they expanded, and connected by a transparent and very beautiful membrane, which presented a considerable surface to the air. They were attached to the shoulders of the fish, between the gills, at the apex of the triangle, by muscles uncommonly strong, and of a solidity and tenacity very different from the substance of the body. I ate part of the fish broiled, and found it very good, exceeding a herring in firmness and flavour. The roe, however, was very strong, and to a certain degree pungent and caustic.

A rare and beautiful species or variety of this fish is sometimes found in the Mediterranean, [illegible] long fins inserted behind [illegible] is a bright violet colour, [illegible] which easily come off; the [illegible] and the frontal bone so [illegible] rain is seen through it.

[illegible] ve which induces this fish [illegible] element, is to avoid the [illegible] ous enemies, which every [illegible] bonitos, albicores, but par- These last we constantly [illegible] them, and frequently out [illegible] bright green backs and silver [illegible] ery beautiful objects. When [illegible] place at night and near a ship, the flying-fish, like all its finny tribe, is strongly attracted by light, flies towards it, perhaps for protection, and enters any part of the vessel where it may be placed. Lanterns are sometimes set for this purpose in the chains: and another caught there was afterwards brought to me. It was the light between decks, gleaming through the port-holes, that attracted the fish to the boy's hammock, when the little creature accidentally took refuge in the lad's bosom. Had such an incident occurred in the days of Ovid, no doubt he would have invented

some mythological metamorphosis to account for it, and have made a pretty tale of the loves of the sailor boy and the flying-fish.



On Tuesday, September 23d, we were in sight of St. Antonio, distant twelve leagues south-east. This is the most westerly of the Cape Verde Islands, and the last land we are likely to see till we make Cape Frio, on the coast of Brazil. The Cape Verde Islands, by some supposed to be the Gorgades or Hesperides, though it is probable that they were not beyond the geographical knowledge of the ancients, to whom the contiguous point of Africa was unknown, were first discovered in 1460 by Antonio Noel, a German, after the Portuguese had passed Cape Bajador, and began to make discoveries to the southward. They are ten in number, lying in a semi-circle off the Cape, about three hundred miles distant. One of the islands is called Fogo, from the circumstance of a volcano still burning there. It is in fact one vast crater, from which smoke always, and flame sometimes issues, which compels the inhabitants frequently to abandon it altogether from suffering or apprehension. One of the small rocky eminences of the cluster is called "Bonito Reef," from the great number of bonitos found there. This peculiarity extends far to the west,

for the sea in which we now were, was full of this fish, who were seen all day, and in all directions, in pursuit of flying-fish.

In the evening we were all on the alert, roused by a shoal of bottle-nosed porpoises swimming on our side. Before them was an immense flock of flying-fish, which they were pursuing; and they swam, to the number of twenty or thirty, right under the bows of the vessel, which was going at the rate of eight knots. For more than an hour they kept exact pace with us, never advancing farther than a few yards ahead, and generally keeping directly under the bows. There was immediately a *soulevement* of the whole ship's company, and we rushed forward, armed with harpoons, and all manner of weapons, and crowded the forecastle, bowsprit, and spritsail yard. It was a most singular and exhilarating sight to view this family of sea-monsters running a race with the ship, rolling and tumbling before it, and causing the surface of the sea to boil again with their plunges. They seemed really animated with an eagerness to beat us; and when any were left behind, they darted forward, with apparent emulation, splashing along, more than half out of the water, then turning their heads and eyes, and looking up at us, with an extraordinary appearance

of consciousness. They were generally six or seven feet long, of a grey colour, darker on the back, and their snouts terminated in a proboscis, like that of a sturgeon, but much more prominent, having the appearance of the neck of a bottle, and thence called by the sailors "bottle-nose."* After several attempts with the harpoon, one was struck in the side, and darted forward, reddening the sea with his blood. We now had him suspended from the bowsprit, and were all on the alert to haul him on board; but his struggles and the weight of his body disengaged him before we could heave him up; he plunged down and disappeared, and the whole family followed him.

The next day we were all on the bowsprit again, watching a shoal of bonitos and albicores, which took place of the porpoises of yesterday. A small harpoon, with four barbed grains, was darted at one, which penetrated his body, and we hauled it on deck. It was like a mackerel in shape and colour, but infinitely larger; it is therefore called the great mackerel.† It measured two feet long, and one foot five inches in circumference. Its back was dark blue, with

* Delphinus leucas; the cachelot, or physeter macrocephalus, is sometimes called the bottle-nose whale.

† Scomber pelamis.

stripes of blueish green running along the sides, and the belly was a bright and beautiful azure, changing its hues into a variety of prismatic shades, according to the incidence of the light. It had two strong dorsal fins, and from the lowest a number of smaller ones, like triangles, continued down to the tail, which formed a perfect crescent, and gave the fish a very unusual appearance. Some junks of it were stewed for dinner; the flesh was solid and dark-brown, like the pelamis, or thunny fish of the Levant, and the taste resembled that of a coarse mackerel. The sailors call it "skip jack," and "St. Helena beef," where it is sold in steaks for about eighteen pence per pound. The albicore* differs only in size from the bonito; it is considerably larger.

On Thursday, September 25, we were in latitude 15° 2′ N., longitude 26° 2′ W. distant from Brava, the last of the Cape Verde Islands, eighty-six miles. The thermometer stood, in the shade at noon, at eighty-six degrees, and the sense of heat was very oppressive. Two ships were in sight; the nearest was a brig, which hoisted English colours, and was supposed to be the Rio packet, but too distant to speak to. Our course was, for the last four days, due south on

* Scomber thynnus.

the meridian, making regularly a degree of latitude every day. A swallow, which for some time had followed the ship, now rested on one of the stays, in a state of complete exhaustion; it had been blown from Brava, or some of the Cape Verde Islands.

The next day we experienced a dead calm, and a sense of intense and suffocating heat, though the thermometer did not rise higher than eighty-three or eighty-four degrees; occasionally dark heavy clouds impended, and a portentous appearance of the sky, with the barometer falling. All these indications taught us to expect the approach of an explosion of wind, and we prepared for it by reefing our courses. These appearances, however, though sometimes followed by a hurricane, and therefore demanding every precaution to guard against its effects, are more frequently fallacious. On this occasion they were so; the clouds dispersed in the night, and the sun rose clear and bright in the morning.

The first object presented to me on going on deck, was a man walking about with a yoke on his neck. It consisted of a heavy circle of wood, opening behind with a hinge, and closing before with a padlock. It was another of those judicious and humane substitutes for

unishment which mark disapprobation without aving recourse to stripes and blows. On this ccasion the man had used improper language, nd called another by an opprobrious name. Such attention to the decencies of life in a ship eemed to have an excellent effect; we have ot heard an oath or a coarse expression since ve have been on board."

The calm and light baffling winds still continued. We had just got within the verge of those limits where the north-east and south-east trade winds meeting cause dead air, as two meeting currents of the sea cause dead water. These limits are supposed to extend to ten degrees on each side of the equator, and frequently disturb the wonderful regularity which marks the winds which prevail from these latitudes to the tropics.

On Saturday, October 4, we were within two degrees of the equator, and every preparation was making on board for the well-known ceremony of Neptune and his court; and returns were given in of all those who had not crossed the line, in order that they might be initiated into his mysteries. At eight o'clock in the evening, the watch were directed, by the officer on deck, to "keep a good look-out ahead;" for this purpose, blue lights were burnt on the bows,

and presently a boat was reported coming on board. A voice was now heard to hail us from the sea, with, "What ship a-hoy?" The captain immediately answered from the quarter-deck, "His Majesty's ship the Galatea." The voice replied, "Who commands her?" and we answered, "Sir Charles Sullivan." "Whither bound?" "To Rio." The voice then announced himself with great solemnity—"I am Neptune; I have already had the pleasure of your company across the line; but as I am not yet acquainted with some of your crew, I must pay them a visit. To-morrow will be the sabbath, and it is not my way to break this holy day; but I request you will inform me when I may come on board." "I respect your scrupulousness, Mr. Neptune, and shall be happy to see you on Monday morning, between one and two bells, when I shall introduce some children to you." "Very well, Sir, very well; I shall be with you;" and so Neptune departed.

The weather had for some time set in exceedingly wet, with a dense close atmosphere, generating a heavy damp, which saturated every thing with moisture, and not a breeze was stirring to ventilate our berths, and dissipate the collected humidity. The sun himself, when he did shine out, seemed wading in mist; his beams were

sultry, but not drying, and when his rays entered through any aperture in the ship, they seemed like so many fenny exhalations. Every thing began to exhibit symptoms of this unwholesome state of the atmosphere. Whatever could imbibe moisture became speedily covered with mould; books lying on each other were in a few hours agglutinated together by the mucor which formed between them; our boots and shoes were covered over with a green vegetation, and large crops of fungi formed in every cavity. We ourselves began to feel we were now placed *sub curru nimium propinqui solis;* we were generally affected, first with a sense of lassitude, and what physicians call anorexia, an inappetence and indifference to every thing, which was succeeded by some distinct complaint. Our young friend, however, was the greatest sufferer; his indisposition became so alarming as to excite the most serious apprehension. He had conciliated, in no small degree, the good will of every one on board; it was pleasing to see the prompt alacrity with which the sailors attended, unbidden, to his accommodation; when he came on deck, the man next him secured an ensign to place under his feet, lest the damp should affect him, and by sundry other little kindnesses, spontaneously offered, proved that the rude element

on which they lived had not at all impaired those kindly feelings which the sight of an interesting young man, wasting away in the prime of life, and the patience and gentleness with which he endured his sufferings, tended not a little to excite.

Sunday, October 5, was a day of heavy rain, and prevented the possibility of the men assembling for divine service in any part of the ship. This prevalence of rain near the line has been remarked by most of the early navigators. "And here it is to be noted," says Master John Winter, "that after we came within four degrees of the equinoctial, until we were as much past it, no daie did pass without great store of raine." At noon, however, we had a brief gleam of sunshine, and found, by observation, that we were twenty-one minutes north of the equator. At eight in the evening we crossed this celebrated division of the hemisphere, going at eight knots in a course west south-west, and cutting it at nearly the angle which the ecliptic makes with it, and so following the course of the sun. Our longitude at the time was 21° 34′ W. It is usual to cross the equator much more to the west, as being more likely to afford an advantageous opportunity of profiting by the north-east trade wind, which is always found at the other

side; but by the prevalence of a south-west wind, we came considerably more to the east than we intended. Is it possible that our approach in this way to the pestiferous coast of Africa might have increased the insalubrity of our atmosphere?

The next day Neptune did not pay us his promised visit. Our young friend continued so unwell, that by common consent the ceremony was omitted, and all disappointment was absorbed in our sympathy for the cause. Indeed the riot and turbulence of this nautical saturnalia would ill accord with sickness and suffering; and many of us were well pleased to escape a custom, "more honoured in the breach than the observance." The *dramatis personæ*, who were prepared on board our ship, were Neptune, Amphitrite as his wife, and their child, Triton, two bears, a bear-keeper, and sundry officers of his court; forming a goodly procession of fifty-seven persons, all dressed in appropriate costume. Neptune was to approach in his chariot drawn by eight horses, and the novice to be brought, in custody and blindfolded, before him. He was then to be placed sitting over a tub of salt water, supported by a blanket, where he was to be lathered with a composition of tar and tallow, and shaved

with an iron hoop. During this operation he was to be asked sundry questions, and when he opened his mouth to answer, the lather-brush was to be thrust into it, the blanket then suddenly withdrawn, and he plunged into the tub. There were 148 persons on board, of all ranks, who were set down to undergo this pleasing ceremony.

It is not known, I believe, at what time, or from what cause, this strange custom originated. It is not noticed in the voyages of the early navigators, given by Hacluyt and others, though the circumstance of passing the line is particularly mentioned. The first person I can meet with who alludes to the ceremony is not an Englishman. In the reign of Louis XIV. a Frenchman of the name of Frezier was sent to visit the Spanish colonies in South America, and published an account of his voyage. He speaks of the ceremony "of the baptism of the line" as a silly custom practised by all nations, and describes the manner of it, but without any of the tar and tallow accompaniments of our sailors.*

* "Le lendemain quand on ne douta plus d'etre en partie du sud, on ne manqua pas de faire la folle ceremonie du batême de la ligne, coutume en usage parmi toutes les nations. On lie les catechumenes par les poignets sur des penins tendus devant en arriere, sur le

Among the emblematic or allegoric personages who issue from the sea in Neptune's train, are two bears and a bear leader: whether they have any reference or allusion to the circumstance of the descent of North Pole, and the immersion of Ursa Major and Minor with their guardian Arctophylax beneath Horizon, and their becoming inhabitants of the sea in this latitude, I leave you to determine.

Tuesday, October 4, the sea was again alive with flying-fish, in all directions, as far as the eye could reach round the horizon. Some of them elevated themselves several yards above the surface, and continued their flight to a great distance. One of them, pursued by a bonito, took refuge on board the ship, and was brought to me, panting and fluttering like a bird. Next day our latitude, by observation, was 6° 50′, which being equal to the sun's declination, he was vertical to us, and, like the wizard, Michael Scot, we had no shadows. Another circumstance, strongly illustrative of a passage in

galliard pour les officiers, et sur le pont pour les matelots; et après plusieurs singeries et mascarades, on les detache pour les conduire les uns après les autres au pied du grand mat, ou on leur fait preter un serment sur une carte, qu'ils feront aux autres comme on leur a fait, suivant les statutes. En suite on paie pour n'etre pas mouillé, mais toujours inutilement; car les capitaines ne sont pas même tout à fait epargnez."—*Frezier, Relation du Voyage de la Mer du Sud en* 1712. p. 14.

Rokeby, struck me this evening; the perpendicular descent of the sun, and the darkness which rapidly succeeded, without the intervention of our crepuscular light—

> "With disk like battle target red
> He rushed down to his burning bed,
> Dyed the wide waves with bloody light,
> Then sunk at once, and all was night."

We had now entered the rapid and steady south-east-trade wind, which swept us along at an unremitting course of ten or eleven knots an hour. At noon on the 9th, we had marked on the board, since twelve o'clock the day before, 241 miles, and by observation 250; and for the last four days we had passed over a surface of 850 miles. We were now within 998 miles of Cape Frio, and congratulated ourselves that we had at length reduced our distance to three figures. Our latitude was increased to 10° 55′ south: so that we had left the sun behind us, and at noon we saw him in the north, a phenomenon, which I now for the first time witnessed, and which was long unknown to the civilized world, and the circumstance deemed impossible.

As we now proceeded with a steady course, and had seldom occasion to unbend, furl, or

alter the position of a sail, the men enjoyed a perfect exemption from the ordinary duties of the ship, and did little more than amuse themselves, in the morning by varied light avocations, and in the evening by music and dancing. The life of a sailor on board a king's ship seems, under such circumstances, a happier lot than any other class of the community of the same rank enjoys, besides the excellent provision made for all his personal comforts in food and clothing. During the day the decks were crowded with busy groups of persons, all engaged in different avocations of industry, which amused and occupied their time. After dark it was a perfect jubilee; all discipline was relaxed, and every man pursued whatever harmless amusement pleased his fancy. The main deck was a ball-room. On one of the guns sat a blind fiddler, the most popular man in the ship. Two lines of sailors formed a lane; and they led one another up and down in the dance with as much zest and enjoyment as ever I saw in a ball-room. On the other side was a choir of singers, and they filled up the intervals of the dance with their merry chants. On the forecastle was a group of droll fellows, for whom music and dancing were too grave. They were perfect pickles, and indulged in all manner of

fun and frolic at each other's expense. It is surprising how habits of discipline modify the actions of men. In the morning they resumed their duties with the silence and regularity of clock-work, and again in the evening all was amusement and fun.

My attention had been, since the commencement of our voyage, directed to a compass made by Pope. The needle was a flat bar of iron, so attached, as to be allowed to alter its horizontal position, independent of the card. The object was to ascertain the dip of the needle in the nicest manner. When we left England the north pole was depressed and the south elevated; and the inclination gradually lessened as we decreased our latitude. In passing the equator, the needle nearly coincided with the plane of the card, and at 10° 25′ south it was horizontal. In advancing south, the north pole of the needle became elevated, and the south pole gradually depressed; and this day, in latitude 15° 30′, it was about three degrees below the card. At Baffin's Bay, in 76° 8′, Captain Ross found the depression to be 86, within four degrees of the perpendicular. These phenomena tend to support the opinion that the magnetic influence resides somewhere near the poles of the earth and below its surface;

hence the north pole of the needle was depressed in the northern hemisphere, and the south pole in the southern; but at or near the equator, it was horizontal, being equally acted on by both influences.

As soon as we had passed the line, we experienced a delightful alteration of weather; and the damp, hazy, sultry heat was exchanged for a dry, bracing, elastic atmosphere, a bright sun, a clear blue sky, and a refreshing temperature, in which the thermometer stood at 78. The constellations of the southern hemisphere were glittering brilliantly above our horizon every night, and among them the southern Cross was very conspicuous, and compensated us for the disappearance of the Bears, which were no longer afraid, as in the days of Homer and Virgil, to bathe in the streams of the ocean.* The Cross rose after midnight, and at four in the morning I went on deck to see it. The aspect of the heavens was singularly beautiful. In the east was Venus just risen, with a brilliancy and lustre which she does not display in the foggy northern hemisphere. She gave a light equal to that of a young moon, casting a slight shadow from opaque bodies on the deck,

* "Arctos oceani *metuentes* equore tingi."—
VIRGIL, *Georg.* Lib. I. l. 246.

and rendering objects very distinct, both at sea and on board. It was the *alma lux nautis affulgens;* and surely nothing could be conceived more bland and bounteous than the light of that lovely star. Orion was in the zenith, glittering with his belt and other appendages, and so bright with so many smaller stars about him, all now vivid and distinct, that he was hardly to be recognized. Among the new objects presented, were the nebulæ Magellanicæ, or Magellan's clouds, two patches of lighter matter than the dark blue sky, and which seemed to be fragments broken from the milky-way, and floated to this spot; a third appeared more distant towards the pole.. They were fixed, like the constellations, on the starry vault, and with them revolved round its axle. In the south was a vast cluster of brilliant stars, many of them of the first magnitude, figuring the Ship and other constellations, and among these, and well defined, was a brilliant cross formed of four stars—the sacred Cynosure of the southern hemisphere. The stars which mark the top and bottom have the same right ascension, and therefore the figure of the Cross is perpendicular when on the meridian, as I often saw it afterwards. In this position it is watched in South America, and they ascertain that it is

past midnight when the Cross begins to decline. This constellation was among the first noted and named in the southern sky. Amerigo Vespucci saw it; Camoens speaks of it as a new star, seen by them and no other people; and Dante is more explicit. The following passage describes the aspect of the starry heavens, as I then saw them, so accurately, that it seems to have been written from actual observation in the same place:

"The radiant planet that to love invites
Made all the orient laugh, and veiled beneath
The Pisces' light, that in her escort came.
To the right hand I turned, and fixed my mind
On th' other pole attentive, where I saw
Four stars, ne'er seen before, save by the ken
Of our first parents. Heaven of their light
Seemed joyous.—Oh, thou northern site, bereft
Indeed and widowed, since of them deprived!"*

Nor was the sea below much less brilliant than the sky above. The waves came charged

* Io notai quattro stelle, figurate como una mandola.—*Letter of Amer. Vesp. to L. de Medici.*

"No novo hemispherio, nova estrella,
Nao vista de outra gente."—CAMOENS, Canto V.

"Lo bel pianeta, ch' ad amor conforta,
Faceva tutto rider l'oriente,
Velando i Pesci, ch' erano in sua scorta.
I' mi volsi a man destra, e posi mente
All' altro polo, e vidi quattro stelle,
Non viste mai, fuor ch' alla prima gente:

with phosphorescent light, and as they broke against the sides of the ship, they opened into chasms of fire, so that she seemed to move in a surface of flame, leaving a long train in the burning wake behind her. The cause of this beautiful phenomenon, which I have observed in every part of the world which I have visited, is generally attributed to one of the many species of lampyris, or other luminous insects, abounding in the water; but I examined with a microscope the water here and in other places, and I never could detect any living thing luminous in itself, though the luminous matter often attached itself to fishes, which seemed to move surrounded by an atmosphere of light. I should

> Goder pareva 'l ciel di ler fiammelle.
> O settentrional vedovo sito,
> Poiché privato se' di mirar quelle!"
>
> DANTE, *Purg.* Canto I.

Some commentators suppose that the four stars mean, metaphorically, the cardinal virtues; but others, and particularly Porterelli, say, they are "le quattro bellissime stelle che formano una croce;" and to account for Dante's knowledge of them they affirm, that Marco Paulo, who returned from his travels in 1295, the year before Dante published his Divina Commedia, and lived at Venice when Dante dwelt at Verona, had communicated to him his observations on the stars of the southern hemisphere. It is remarkable, that when Amerigo Vespucci saw the four stars, he supposed also they must have been those alluded to by the poet. And indeed it is impossible that any one who viewed the starry heavens in this latitude, with the above passage on his mind, could imagine it was written by any person who had not himself, or who had not heard them described by others who had, seen them.

rather incline to the opinion of those who attribute it to phosphorus diffused through the water, which, as soon as a new surface is exposed and it comes in contact with the air, combines with the oxygen of the atmosphere, and burns with a slow and luminous combustion. Of all animal substances, putrid fish most abounds with this property. In the cabins of the poor, where whiting or haddock are hung up to dry, the light is sometimes sufficient for domestic purposes without a candle; and Smollet has availed himself of this circumstance in one of his novels. The water in which fish is washed becomes frequently luminous from this cause, and putrid spawn sometimes yields the light in great abundance. M. Bomaire was bathing in the harbour of Cette, in Languedoc, with a friend, on a very hot day, and they both appeared covered with fire at every immersion, and laying his wet hand on the dry arm of his companion, who had not dipped himself, the exact marks of his palm and fingers were seen in characters of fire. A circumstance of a similar nature occurred to myself. I was crossing the very inconvenient Menai ferry, in North Wales, with some ladies, before the bridge was built. The night was very dark, and the Welshmen would not allow us a light, though we had a long way to walk

through slime and sea-weed from the boat; but the water, when disturbed by the oars, was so luminous that it lighted us across; and when we landed on the weeds, our feet left behind us tracks of fire sufficient to point out the way to those who followed. I examined the weed, and found on it abundance of putrid slime, which, on being disturbed, yielded phosphorescent light. It is not easy to conceive how agitation of water should be always necessary, if the light was produced from any other cause.

I was this day invited to dine with my young friends the midshipmen. They were divided into two messes, the larboard and starboard. These were little recesses boarded off on each side the mainmast, lighted by bulls'-eyes, but so faintly that it was necessary to have candles at mid-day. It was so intensely hot, that we were all obliged to strip, and dine in our trousers and shirts. Our dinner consisted of roast beef, in the midst of the Atlantic, salt fish, and potatoes, and our drink was grog, of which each person was allowed half a pint, or two glasses of rum to make it. My young friends were very temperate, and most of them drank nothing but water. Notwithstanding their rude and primitive accommodation, which I suppose was the same as existed unaltered in the navy for a

century, their manners and habits were not stationary, but, very unlike the rough and uncouth animals depicted by Congreve and Smollet, they were courteous, gentleman-like, and intelligent, intimating that the schoolmaster was abroad, on sea as well as on shore, and I derived no less information than amusement from their conversation. In explaining the division of time on board, they informed me that one watch was divided into two, in order to make an odd number, that the same watch might not fall to the same persons every day, and that the two short watches were called *dog-watches*. On inquiring into the reason of this odd appellation, one said dog was a corruption of dock, because the watch was cut short; but another remarked that it was more probably named dog-watch because the time was *cur-tailed*.

In the evening they were called up, and exercised at furling and unbending the sails. One of them lost his feet, and it was with infinite anxiety I saw my young friend hanging pendant by his hands alone, from the mizen-top gallant yard, in the imminent hazard every moment of being dashed to pieces on deck. He, however, at last recovered himself, and completed his task with great dexterity and despatch. Intelligent minds, and gentlemanly

manners, are not at all incompatible with the rougher duties, and those only are fit to command who themselves have gone through and learned them.

On the 15th of October, our approach to land was intimated by the colour of the sea, which changed from dark blue to light green; and at twelve o'clock, Cape Frio burst upon our view. This bold headland was particularly interesting to us; not only because it was land, after so long a sojourn on the expanse of waters, but because it presented to us the first view of the new world, and the vast continent of America. It appeared as a high flat mountain, capped with a grey-coloured mist, having others higher, seen indistinctly behind it, and a chain of hillocks running at each side from it. Every thing contributed to make an approach to this promontory delightful, which stood out as it were to invite us. The temperature of the air was delicious — the thermometer, in the morning, standing at 72°, and at noon at 73°; and our progress was rapid, having made 210 miles since noon the day before. From hence to the harbour of Rio, the distance was sixty miles; and our course was parallel to, and not far from the shore. The coast was very bold, high, and varied; consisting

of hills and headlands, clothed with wood to their summits, and divided by deep and romantic glens. At the base were strands of snow-white sand, on which the sea beat with a very high surf. Several of the hills were conical, but of a rude and rugged outline; and one of them was called the false sugar-loaf, to distinguish it from the true and more perfect cone which marks the entrance into Rio harbour.

Just as we passed Cape Frio, a strong breeze set in from the sea, which swept us along at the rate of thirteen knots, so that we made, from two P. M. to six, fifty-three miles in four hours. During the continuance of this breeze, the thermometer fell to 61°, and the sense of cold from the sudden transition of temperature was quite painful. After bearing it for some time, shivering on deck, it became intolerable, and we all went below, put on our warm clothing and dreadnaughts, and again appeared with thick woollen jackets and trousers, as if we were entering Baffin's Bay, and not a harbour under one of the tropics. This sudden change of temperature in this place is very usual; and some persons at Rio afterwards informed me they had experienced and remarked it. The name, in Portuguese, implies the *Cold Cape*,

and no doubt it was given to it by the early navigators from a similar experience.

At six we passed the islands of Pay and May, father and mother, and soon after were abreast of the Pao d'Assucar, the real sugar-loaf. This very remarkable hill is perfectly conical, from a certain height, with sides so steep, and surface so smooth, that it was considered impossible to ascend to its summit; the perilous adventure, however, was attempted, and with success. The vast cone is very important as a land mark, as it forms one side of the entrance of the harbour of Rio; and from its very singular and perfect shape, cannot be mistaken for another. We were now all prepared to enter the harbour, the mouth of which lay open before us, inviting an approach. We were advancing with a steady breeze; but just as we were about to enter, the wind suddenly died away, and the tide began to ebb, so we were obliged to drop anchor. The cold ceased with the breeze, and we began to feel the influence of the coast: the stars were no longer glittering in the clear sky, but a hazy mist hung over us, rendering them, and every other object, dim and indistinct.

Nothing could exceed the beauty of the place in which we lay next morning, when light

rendered objects distinct. On our left was a range of fantastic hills, receding behind each other; those in front rising into cones, and terminated by the great Sugar-loaf. The hills behind, which marked the horizon, presented a rough profile of a human countenance turned up, having a hooked nose and chin, and therefore called by the English, Lord Hood's face, which it is said to resemble, as much as the perpendicular section of Arthur's Seat, near Edinburgh, does that of Lord Nelson. As the attention of people is directed to craniology and physiognomy, they extract scientific subjects from rocks and mountains. Lord Hood's head is seen at Rio, Lord Nelson's at Edinburgh, and Dr. Johnson's on the granite rocks of Cornwall, at the Lands-end. The hills were generally clothed with wood to their summit; the broad leaf of the banana, and the feathery foliage of the palms crowning their tops, gave them to us a new and singular tropical character.

About twelve, the sea breeze sprung up, and we entered the most magnificent harbour in the world. We steered between the Ilha da Lage and the point of Santa Cruz, through a passage about five thousand feet wide; and as there are strong fortresses on the island

and the point, the entrance seems completely closed against a hostile force. Having passed these points, the bay expanded, forming an immense basin, surrounded by romantic wooded hills; some advancing a considerable way into the harbour, others retiring, and leaving between them deep recesses and glens, which were filled with villas. On our left was the town of Rio, standing between several lofty eminences; not, like Rome and Constantinople, ascending over them, but the streets winding their way in the valleys below, and churches and convents only crowning the hills above. In the bay were multitudes of ships of all nations, both of war and commerce; not crowded together, as in our contracted rivers, but spread over the wide expanse of waters, and dotting the surface in all directions. In the distance were the Organ mountains, forming a singular back-ground to this picture. These are a range of granite pikes, bristling up along the horizon, and piercing the clouds with their long sharp summits, projected on the sky like organ pipes in a vast cathedral, and hence deriving their extraordinary appellation. I had heard much of the beauty of this harbour, but the reality far exceeded my conceptions. It could hardly be compared with

VIEW of RIO DE JANEIRO taken from the CONVENT of SANTA THERESA

Constantinople, the character of both was so different; but certainly in grandeur, extent, and romantic scenery, it far exceeded it. It looked like what it is likely to be, the great basin of a magnificent country, which nature intended should hereafter become the emporium of the world.

Among the objects of great interest that struck me, as connected with historical detail, was a fort on a small island lying between us and the town, called Villegagnon, a name recalling to our recollection the important fact, that the first colonists of this magnificent part of the new world were protestants; and, had the man who bore it been worthy of his trust, it would now have been peopled by a race of men who would long since have distinguished it by the industry, activity, and enterprize generally supposed to be connected with the progress of the Reformation. Had this attempt succeeded, and a reformed population been then established in the country, with all that spring and energy of exertion that has distinguished it in Europe and North America, instead of this magnificent country and its splendid harbour being sealed up, by intolerant laws and jealous precautions, from all the world for two hundred and fifty years, it would now

be, what it will hereafter become, the great receptacle for the wealth and industry of all nations. We have seen what it has done with its available advantages in a few years; what will it not do in revolving centuries?

We were surrounded at our anchorage by ships of war of different nations. The French squadron consisted of a ship of the line, two frigates, and three schooners, and other nations in proportion. The English was reduced to two frigates, the Thetis and Tribune; the Admiral was out on a cruize to Bahia. We hoisted the Brazilian flag at the mast head, and saluted the batteries, and an exchange of salutes took place between us and all the ships of war. The echo caused by these guns was very remarkable by the repercussion from hill to hill round the bay. After the first loud explosion, the return of the sound to the ear was quick, short, and sharp, in different directions, so that every discharge of cannon was followed by several distinct minor reports, like a succession of pistol shots at a distance. Captain Wilson, of the Tribune, dined with us, and I enquired from him, whether there had been any remarkable change of temperature at Rio the day before. I learned that the weather had continued uniform, and remarkably hot all day,

so that the very cold current of air we had experienced was confined to the vicinity of Cape Frio. In a country where no snow, or other frigorific surface, exists to cool it in passing, it is not easy to say how it is generated in that particular spot.

The bay next morning presented to us a very busy scene. The surface was a moving panorama of boats of all kinds, passing from one side of the water to the other. They were generally manned by negroes, whose only covering was a pair of drawers, and an old straw hat. The boats were large, with a canopy astern, to shade passengers from the sun, and they were impelled by four long oars, rowed by the black crew. I took a boat with some of the officers of the ship, impatient to set my foot, for the first time, on the shores of South America. We landed in front of the palace, on a slip of hewn granite flags, and ascended to a quay protected by a parapet of the same material. I afterwards found that the town was surrounded by cliffs of this rock; and among the many natural advantages of the place, were quarries, in all quarters, of the finest and purest building stone in the world. We passed the Largo do Paço, or Palace Square, and proceeded up the Rua Direita, the largest

street in the whole town, and the centre of commerce. It lies parallel to the bay, and from it all the others run at right angles. Here is the Alfandega, or custom house, and here, for the first time, I saw the negro population under circumstances so striking to a stranger.

The whole labour of bearing and moving burdens is performed by these people, and the state in which they appear is revolting to humanity. Here was a number of beings entirely naked, with the exception of a covering of dirty rags tied about their waists. Their skins, from constant exposure to the weather, had become hard, crusty, and seamed, resembling the coarse black covering of some beast, or like that of an elephant, a wrinkled hide scattered with scanty hairs. On contemplating their persons, you saw them with a physical organization, resembling beings of a grade below the rank of man; long projecting heels, the gastronimic muscle wanting, and no calves to their legs; their mouths and chins protruded, their noses flat, their foreheads retiring, having exactly the head and legs of the baboon tribe. Some of these beings were yoked to drays, on which they dragged heavy burdens. Some were chained by the necks and legs, and moved with loads thus encumbered. Some followed

each other in ranks, with heavy weights on their heads, chattering the most inarticulate and dismal cadence as they moved along. Some were munching young sugar-canes, like beasts of burden eating green provender, and some were seen near the water, lying on the bare ground among filth and offal, coiled up like dogs, and seeming to expect or require no more comfort or accommodation, exhibiting a state and conformation so unhuman, that they not only seemed, but actually were, far below the inferior animals around them. Horses and mules were not employed in this way; they were used only for pleasure, and not for labour. They were seen in the same streets, pampered, spirited, and richly caparisoned, enjoying a state far superior to the negroes, and appearing to look down on the fettered and burdened wretches they were passing, as on beings of an inferior rank in the creation to themselves. Some of the negroes actually seemed to envy the caparisons of their fellow brutes, and eyed with jealousy their glittering harness. In imitation of this finery, they were fond of thrums of many-coloured threads; and I saw one creature, who supported the squalid rag that wrapped his waist by a suspender of gaudy worsted, which he turned every moment to look

at, on his naked shoulder. The greater number, however, were as unconscious of any covering for use or ornament, as a pig or an ass.

The first impression of all this on my mind, was to shake the conviction I had always felt, of the wrong and hardship inflicted on our black fellow-creatures, and that they were only in that state which God and nature had assigned them; that they were the lowest grade of human existence, and the link that connected it with the brute, and that the gradation was so insensible, and their natures so intermingled, that it was impossible to tell where one had terminated and the other commenced; and that it was not surprising that people who contemplated them every day, so formed, so employed, and so degraded, should forget their claims to that rank in the scale of beings in which modern philanthropists are so anxious to place them. I did not at the moment myself recollect, that the white man, made a slave on the coast of Africa, suffers not only a similar mental but physical deterioration from hardships and emaciation, and becomes in time the dull and deformed beast I now saw yoked to a burden.

A few hours only were necessary to correct

my first impressions of the negro population, by seeing them under a different aspect. We were attracted by the sound of military music, and found it proceeded from a regiment drawn up in one of the streets. Their colonel had just died, and they attended to form a procession to celebrate his obsequies. They were all of different shades of black, but the majority were negroes. Their equipment was excellent; they wore dark jackets, white pantaloons, and black leather caps and belts, all which, with their arms, were in high order. Their band produced sweet and agreeable music, of the leader's own composition, and the men went through some evolutions with regularity and dexterity. They were only a militia regiment, yet were as well appointed and disciplined as one of our regiments of the line. Here then was the first step in that gradation by which the black population of this country ascend in the scale of humanity; he advances from the state below that of a beast of burden into a military rank, and he shows himself as capable of discipline and improvement as a human being of any other colour.

Our attention was next attracted by negro men and women bearing about a variety of articles for sale; some in baskets, some on

boards and cases carried on their heads. They belonged to a class of small shopkeepers, many of whom vend their wares at home, but the greater number send them about in this way, as in itinerant shops. A few of these people were still in a state of bondage, and brought a certain sum every evening to their owners, as the produce of their daily labour. But a large proportion, I was informed, were free, and exercised this little calling on their own account. They were all very neat and clean in their persons, and had a decorum and sense of respectability about them, superior to whites of the same class and calling. All their articles were good in their kind, and neatly kept, and they sold them with simplicity and confidence, neither wishing to take advantage of others, nor suspecting that it would be taken of themselves. I bought some confectionary from one of the females, and I was struck with the modesty and propriety of her manner; she was a young mother, and had with her a neatly dressed child, of which she seemed very fond. I gave it a little comfit, and it turned up its dusky countenance to her and then to me, taking my sweetmeat, and at the same time kissing my hand. As yet unacquainted with the coin of the country, I had none that was current about

me, and was leaving the articles; but the poor young woman pressed them on me with a ready confidence, repeating in broken Portuguese, *outo tempo.* I am sorry to say, the "other time" never came, for I could not recognize her person afterwards to discharge her little debt, though I went to the same place for the purpose.

It soon began to grow dark, and I was attracted by a number of persons bearing large lighted wax tapers, like torches, gathering before a house. As I passed by, one was put into my hand by a man who seemed in some authority, and I was requested to fall into a procession that was forming. It was the preparation for a funeral, and on such occasions, I learned that they always request the attendance of a passing stranger, and feel hurt if they are refused. I joined the party, and proceeded with them to a neighbouring church. When we entered we ranged ourselves on each side of a platform which stood near the choir, on which was laid an open coffin, covered with pink silk and gold borders. The funeral service was chanted by a choir of priests, one of whom was a negro, a large comely man, whose jet black visage formed a strong and striking contrast to his white vestments. He seemed to

perform his part with a decorum and sense of solemnity, which I did not observe in his brethren. After scattering flowers on the coffin, and fumigating it with incense, they retired, the procession dispersed, and we returned on board.

I had been but a few hours on shore, for the first time, and I saw an African negro under four aspects of society; and it appeared to me, that in every one his character depended on the state in which he was placed, and the estimation in which he was held. As a despised slave, he was far lower than other animals of burthen that surrounded him; more miserable in his look, more revolting in his nakedness, more distorted in his person, and apparently more deficient in intellect than the horses and mules that passed him by. Advanced to the grade of a soldier, he was clean and neat in his person, amenable to discipline, expert at his exercises, and showed the port and being of a white man similarly placed. As a citizen, he was remarkable for the respectability of his appearance, and the decorum of his manners in the rank assigned him; and as a priest, standing in the house of God, appointed to instruct society on their most important interests, and in a grade in which moral and intellectual fitness is re-

quired, and a certain degree of superiority is expected, he seemed even more devout in his impressions, and more correct in his manners, than his white associates. I came, therefore, to the irresistible conclusion in my mind, that colour was an accident affecting the surface of a man, and having no more to do with his qualities than his clothes—that God had equally created an African in the image of his person, and equally given him an immortal soul; and that an European had no pretext but his own cupidity, for impiously thrusting his fellow-man from that rank in the creation which the Almighty had assigned him, and degrading him below the lot of the brute beasts that perish.

The next day I visited Mr. Price, an intelligent English merchant, to whom I had letters. He lived in the Rua dos Pescadores, or Fisherman's street, because it was originally inhabited by some of this class when the sea came up to their doors. His house was large and massive, built of hewn stone; and as it was a representative of all the houses of the British merchants, I will briefly describe it. Below was a large shop, or store, filled with all kinds of goods: between it and the main wall, was a long narrow entry to a flight of stone stairs, which led to the second floor, in which was

a large apartment, half of it appropriated to the purposes of an office, and the other half filled with boots, saddles, hats, and other articles of English manufacture. He invited me to dine with him at two o'clock, and on my return at that hour, I found all the streets deserted, the houses closed up, and the whole town in this commercial part, like a city of the dead—as silent and solitary at mid-day, as at mid-night. All the inhabitants were at their dinner, or taking their siesta; and during that time all business is suspended: every place below was shut up, so I made my way to the top of the house. Here I found Mr. Price and his family assembled. I returned with my host to his apartment, and dressed for dinner, by taking off my coat, and putting on a calico jacket; and this preparatory luxury is part of the entertainment a Brazilian host always provides for his guests as regular as napkins.

In the evening I proceeded along the Rua dos Pescadores, to where it terminated in a large open square, called the Campo de Sta. Anna. The shops were again opened, and filled with all kinds of European merchandize, particularly Manchester shawls, handkerchiefs, cottons and calicos of the most showy colours, broad-cloths, silks, hats, boots, shoes, and

stockings, all hung out in front of the houses, and covering the doors and windows with their rich drapery. These things were sent out in such profusion, and the market was so overstocked, that they were selling in the Rua dos Pescadores, for less money than in Cheapside.

Having passed the shops, I arrived at that part of the street towards the country, where no business was carried on. The solitude and seclusion of the houses were strikingly contrasted. The windows were barred up like those of the Turks, with lattices of close cross-barred laths, which scarcely admitted the light, and through which it was impossible to see or be seen. These were suspended from above by a hinge, and opened from below, and when any of the inmates wish to look out, they thrust their heads against them, and push them forward. In almost every house as I went along, I saw some woman's forehead pressed on this blind; and in the opening was a black, brown, or sallow visage, with dark eyes, gleaming obliquely through the aperture, one up and the other down the street. On the arrival of the court, the windows of all the houses of the town were hung with these *gelosias*, projecting into the narrow streets when opened, and intercepting the passage; but an edict was then published, that as Rio was

elevated to a high destiny, it should show its sense of it, by abolishing all its gothic customs, and assimilating itself to the improvements of Europe: that those barred up windows were as unwholesome, as they were barbarous and unseemly, by interrupting the free current of air: that, therefore, within six months, they should all be removed, except from clay-built houses. This edict had the desired effect, and they have now disappeared, except from the low edifices of this description, in the remote streets.

The aspect of the streets was extraordinary; they were narrow, and crossed one another at right angles, and were called Rua and Travessa. The Rua commenced on the shore of the bay, and ran in a right line till it terminated in a large open space inland. The Travessa, or cross street, was closed up by two ranges of hills, so that when I stood at the angle of crossing, and looked both ways, I saw at the extremities of one, the sea and the country; and at the extremities of the other, the abrupt face of two steep rocks. If the defile in which this most opulent and populous, as well as largest portion of the town is crammed, lay in the direction of the bay, it would be ventilated continually by alternate currents of air, caused by

the regular land and sea breezes; but unfortunately it lies across it, and every breath of passing wind is interrupted by the two ridges of hills that cut their course.

On emerging from this suffocating gorge, I found myself in an open plain, into which all the streets leading from the sea debouche; and I perceived that the land views of this magnificent country were equal to those of the coast. The plain was nearly surrounded by a vast amphitheatre of mountains; their bases were sloping lawns of the richest verdure, terminated by belts of forest trees of immense growth and variety, from which issued their summits, rugged and shaped in all varieties of form; some ridged, some peaked, and some abruptly bent. One of these latter is called, from its very extraordinary and fantastic shape, the Corcovado, or broken back; an appellation which it well deserves. On advancing into this plain, I found it was enclosed with houses, so as to form an enormous quadrangle, among which was the senate-house, the museum, the camera, or town-hall, and other public buildings. It is, therefore, secured from further encroachment, and reserves to the capital of Brazil the boast of possessing perhaps the largest square in the world. It had been called the Campo de S$^{ta.}$ Anna, but

its name was changed to the Campo d'Acclamação, and it is sacred to the Brazilians, as some of the most important events of their revolution were transacted upon it.

The first impressions of the town of Rio were very favourable. The streets, though narrow, were well paved, and generally lined at each side by flagged trottoirs, as wide as the space would admit. The houses were massive, built of granite, with the windows and doors cased with hewn blocks of this stone, which the quarries at the end of every street supply in abundance, of the finest quality. It is among the happy immunities of the country, that it is not liable to the accidents which occur in a similar latitude on the other side of the continent. Earthquakes are unknown, and no danger is ever apprehended from the prostration of heavy or lofty buildings. The houses are neat, and kept in good order. The streets are clean, and there are no offals or offensive smells intruded on the senses of the passengers.

The house taken for our residence was entirely at the other end of the city, and at a considerable distance. The passing from one place to another in Rio, is not in a direct line; mountains literally intervene between one street and another; and, as you cannot climb over their summits,

you must wind round their bases. A range of these hills approach so close to the sea, as to leave only a narrow way between them and the water. Beyond is another open space of level ground, somewhat similar to that which I have described, and called Catete, on which a new town has been built. A street, with houses on one side, and open to the sea on the other, connects them both; and in this was our residence. The house belonged to a gentleman who had been an officer in the British navy, but had changed the service; and from the rank of lieutenant, was promoted to that of commodore in the Brazilian service. His house corresponded with his station, and was fit for the residence of an Ambassador in Brazil. Indeed, had it been worse, it would not have been easy to procure a better. It stood at the base of a rock, which over-hung it with its pendent vegetation: before it was the sea, immediately under the windows, where the waves continually rolled on a bed of fine white sand, forming a little bay, terminated by the beautiful promontory of Gloria, its summit crowned with its ornamental church, and its sides dotted with villas. Opposite were the romantic highlands, which formed the east side of the bay, projecting and retiring, with their forest-covered sides,

clothed in eternal verdure; sometimes smiling in the sun, and sometimes veiled in dense mists, which displayed an infinite variety of light and shade, as they rolled over them. The expanse of water between, was an ever-moving surface of ships, entering or leaving the harbour, with the morning and evening winds. In this spot, ventilated by the wholesome breezes, and animated by the lovely scenery, we were in hopes our young friend would soon be restored to health.

Having now ample leisure and opportunities for inquiry, I made myself acquainted with the particulars of many events, of which I had, in Europe, but indistinct, or incorrect information. It may be satisfactory, therefore, to give you a brief detail of the principal circumstances which occurred in this place since its discovery, up to the time of our arrival; particularly of those which took place from the emigration of the court of Portugal, comprehending the transition of the country to independence, and the formation of its present constitution.

The discovery of Brazil was an accident. In 1499, Vasco de Gama returned to Europe with the certainty of having found out the long sought for navigation to India; and Emanuel, king of Portugal, in the following year despatched

an armada of ten caravels, and three ships, carrying twelve hundred persons, under the command of Pedralvez Cabral, to form a treaty of commerce with the king of Callicut. The squadron, in order to avoid the calms of the coast of Africa, stood a considerable way to the west, and, at the end of April, being in seventeen degrees of south latitude, he was astonished at seeing certain plants floating, which he considered as indications of land; on the next day, towards evening, he observed a large mountain, with other smaller ones, on the horizon, and, as it was on the octave of Easter, he called the highland the Pascal mountain. On the 3d of May he landed at Porto Seguro, the day dedicated to the holy cross; and having erected one on shore, and said mass under it, he called the country for that reason, "Terra Nova da Vera Cruz," or the New Land of the Holy Cross, and this was the name by which only it was known to Camoens.*

The country was found to produce, in great abundance in the forests, a tree long known in Europe as a valuable dye, whose wood resembled fire, and was thence called Pão Brases.

* ——— "co o pão vermelho nota,
Da Sancta Cruz o nome lhe poreis."
Cam. Cant. X. v. 140.

The first cargo of this wood was sent to Europe from Pernambuco, or, as it was then called, Fernambuco, by Dias Solis, in 1515. It was generally sought for from that time as an article of commerce, and was sometimes known by the name of Fernambuc, from the district of Brazil from whence it was brought. In process of time, the wood gave its name to the country that produced it, and the appellation of Vera Cruz was insensibly lost in that of Brazes or Brazil. "The unworthy traffic," as the Jesuits call it, of this name, was pathetically lamented by them; "that the cupidity of man should change the wood of the cross, red with the real blood of Christ, for that of another wood which resembled it only in colour."*

The harbour of Rio was discovered on the 1st of January, 1531, by Martin Alphonso de Souza. It was called by the natives Nitherohy; but he, supposing at the first view, that the fine expanse of water was only the estuary of some

* "O terceiro nome foi o de Brazil, em que fez troca a cobiça de quelles, que depois vierão ao tratto do pão q'agora chamão deste nome. Não sem algum abatimento do primeiro, substituendoze aq'lle Madeiro, vermelho come sangue do Christo et proço da nossa Redempção, outro Madeiro que so tem de sangue o cor. Com rezão se queixa desta mudacão o historiador Portuguez."—*Chron. da Compan. de Jesu.: do estad do Brazil*, p. 133.

great river, like the mouth of the Amazons, or Oronoko, called it the Rio de Janeiro, or River of January, from the first day of the month of the new year on which he discovered it. This very improper name the bay still retains, though it is not given to any of the numerous small streams that fall into it; and the absurd supposition of its being a river is still kept up in the epithets applied to every thing connected with it. One of the newspapers published here is named Aurora Fluminense, and the citizens are called Fluminenses, appellations which I was at first at a loss to account for.

This fine harbour, however, remained for many years unnoticed, or unoccupied, by the Portuguese, till their attention was directed to it by other nations, who wished to take possession of it. In the year 1558, Nicholas Villegagnon, a man of Provence, in France, and a knight of Malta, was high in the naval service of that country, and he was selected to effect an object which the French were eager to accomplish. This was to obtain territory in South America, and Villegagnon was sent out to take possession of this unoccupied harbour, the region about which was to be called Antarctic France. He accordingly entered the bay, and established himself on the small island before mentioned,

which still bears his name. It was now determined to make this country an asylum for Hugonots, and the leaders of that party in France used every effort to promote it. Among these was the celebrated Admiral Coligny, and the fortress erected on the island was called after his name. A colony of Protestants was collected, and sent out from France, and placed under his protection. Two clergymen of that persuasion were selected at Geneva, with fourteen students in divinity, to act as pastors for the present, and supply them to future congregations as they should be wanted. There was, therefore, every reason to hope, that the Reformation would take root here, and in process of time fill the south as well as the north of the new world with a Protestant people. But Villegagnon seems to have been utterly unworthy of his trust. He commenced a persecution against these unfortunate men, who had left their own country for conscience sake, till he drove many of them from this place also. Some requested permission to return to Europe, and he provided a vessel so badly found, that they refused to embark, and were persecuted to death on the island.

Meanwhile the Portuguese, jealous of this encroachment, and alarmed at the progress of

these strangers of the new faith in the country, sent an armament from Bahia, to dispossess them, under Mendo or Mem da Sa. Weakened, it should appear, by their intestine dissensions, the garrison were not able to make an effectual resistance to the Portuguese. They were driven, therefore, from their island, and the fortress was taken and demolished. The remnant of the Protestant garrison retired to the continent, and were well received by the Tamoyas Indians, with whom they had formed an alliance, and they established themselves outside the mouth of the harbour, just under the Pão d'Assucar, or the Sugar Loaf; and here they maintained themselves by new accessions of people from Europe for ten years. But in 1565, the Portuguese again set out, with a more powerful force, from Bahia, and landing at all the intermediate capitanias on the coast, offered to transport gratuitously all persons, with their effects, who wished to form a new colony at Rio. With this accession they again entered the harbour, and after a struggle of two years more with the Hugonots, took their forts of Urussumiri and Paranapucué, completely extirpated the colony, and crushed the hopes of the Protestants of Europe of seeing the Reformation established in this part of the new world.

The Portuguese colonists erected their first edifices on the ground lying between the Pão d'Assucar and the Morro of S. João, now one of the fortresses which defend the entrance at the harbour. This was called the Villa Velha, or the Old City; but I could not find that a vestige of the houses are traceable at this day. In the year 1567, Catherine, who governed the kingdom as regent during the minority of Sebastião, directed that a city should be built on the spot where it now stands, and called S. Sebastião, as well in honour of the young king, her grandchild, who was then thirteen years old, as of the saint of that name, whom Mem da Sa took as his patron in his conflict with the Indians and the rabble of French Hugonots, as the Portuguese writers call them. The city made but little progress, and was principally confined to the point about the Calabouço, near which some very old houses, with the church and fortress of S. Sebastião, yet remain to attest the first foundations of the city: but in the end of the seventeenth century, the Paulistas having discovered the Minas Geräes, and extracted from them such abundance of precious metals and stones, their fame attracted multitudes from Portugal, who established themselves at S. Sebastião, the principal and most direct

port which led to these rich regions; and this accession of wealth and people soon caused a correspondent extension of houses to accommodate them.

The aspect of the country round was singularly unpromising for the erection of a large town. It consisted of an extensive marsh, generally inundated with stagnant pools, and wholly intersected with putrid streams of muddy water. Floating on this marsh was a number of hills covered with mato, or thickets, whose sides were too abrupt to build on; they stood in the midst of the plain as heavy incumbrances to the soil, too vast to be removed, and too steep to be available; intercepting the free current of air, and rendering still more deleterious in a tropical climate, the exhalations of marsh miasma, which rose from the soil below. Yet it was through this repulsive spot they began to build the new town, which now bids fair to be not only the largest and most opulent, but also one of the healthiest cities of the new world: the marsh was drained, the mato cut down, and industry having done something, the singular salubrity of the climate and its exemption from ordinary tropical distempers did the rest.

In 1676 it was erected into a bishopric, and the palace was built on one of the elevated hills.

From this commencement sundry other religious edifices were raised in similar situations; and while the commercial and lay community were content to occupy the marsh flats below, the ecclesiastics, with their usual felicity and good sense, selected the beautiful situations above, until every hill was crowned with some monastery, suspended as it were in the air, looking down on the town below as its guardians, and enjoying above the most balmy atmosphere and lovely prospect to be met with in the world.

The riches of Rio de Janeiro now made it an object of cupidity to other European powers. The French again renewed the project of Villegagnon. In 1710, General du Clerc was sent out with a squadron, and a force of 1,200 men, to take possession of the city; but not daring to pass the bar, he disembarked his men at Guarateba, on a desert shore. From hence he was led by two negroes through the mountains and entered the city, penetrating to the principal largo, or open space, in the town. Here he was attacked by the people, and forced to retire to the trapiche, or town store, on the shores of the bay, where he was obliged to capitulate with all his men that remained alive.

But in the year following, the celebrated corsair Du Guay Trouim, with much superior

force, passed the bar, and, under cover of a thick fog, advanced up the harbour, and took possession of the Ilha das Cobras, which had been abandoned, and from hence cannonaded the town. The Convent of Sam Bento stands on a hill directly opposite the spot, and suffered severely from this cannonade. The massive walls were riddled with the shot, the deep marks of which yet remain after an interval of more than a century, and were pointed out to me by the good fathers when I visited the library. The monks at the time, with other ecclesiastics, retired to the wild mountains round the water-fall of Tijuco, ten or twelve miles from the city, and the hermitages and altars they erected among the rocks are yet preserved there. After inflicting much misery on the city, which he held in possession for some time, he heard that forces were approaching from the Minas Geräes, and he agreed to ransom it and depart. The ransom paid was 110,000 crusados in money, 100 casks of sugar, and 200 oxen to victual his fleet. The people of Rio still retain a strong memory of the invasion, and cherish traditionary stories of the many outrages inflicted on them by the French.

It gradually, however, recovered from these effects, and the natural advantages of the

situation were such, that, in the year 1763, Dom Joseph transferred hither the vice-regal residence from Bahia, hitherto the capital of Brazil, and the city of Rio properly commenced. Among the viceroys distinguished for their improvements of the new capital are the Marquis de Livradio and Luiz de Vasconcellos, and many of the finest and most useful public works still bear their image and superscription.

But the circumstance which really conferred on it more advantages than any other cause, was the emigration of the royal family of Portugal to Brazil; an event from which it dates its first commencement of actual prosperity, when it ceased to be a mere province, appendant on the will and caprice of another state, but was recognized as a country, having a name and a national character of its own. The idea of removing the court to Brazil, as affording an asylum to a weak government against the oppression of its more powerful neighbours, had been long entertained in Portugal. In the year 1761, the Marquis de Pombal had determined on the measure, and preparations were made to transport the royal family across the Atlantic: but the danger of invasion subsided, and the project was at the time abandoned, to be revived on the next emergency. This occurred

again in 1807, when a foreign army invaded the country, and the court finally resolved to abandon Europe.

On the 14th January, 1808, it was announced at Rio, by the arrival of the brig Guerra Voador, that the French and Spaniards were entering Portugal to seize on the person of the prince regent, and that he had embarked, on the 29th of November, in the harbour of Lisbon, with all the royal family, with the intention of proceeding to Rio de Janeiro to establish his court there, and that the squadron which accompanied him might be daily expected. This news was received at Rio with an extraordinary mixture of sorrow and joy—sorrow that such calamities should overwhelm the mother country, to which the good people of Brazil were still fondly attached, and joy that an august monarch, of whom they entertained the most exalted and extravagant notions, should condescend to visit their humble country, and take up his residence there. The preparations for his reception occupied all thoughts. The viceroy's palace was immediately prepared, and all the public offices in the same square were vacated to accommodate the royal cortège; and as they were not deemed sufficient, all the proprietors of the private houses in the neighbourhood

were obliged to quit their residences and send in the keys to the viceroy, which it appears they did without the least hesitation; and couriers were despatched to the governor of St. Paul's and the Minas Geräes, to announce the happy event, and demand that all the provisions of the provinces should be sent to Rio for the royal entertainment.

In the very commencement of all these preparations it was announced on Sunday, the 17th of January, that the royal squadron were off the coast: but it appeared that a tempest on the 9th of December had assailed and scattered them, and the only ship now arrived was that which contained some of the females of the royal family. It happened to be on the night of the festival of the patron of S. Sebastião, on which it is usual to illuminate the city; so it was prolonged for three days to commemorate the happy event; and in the mean time three days' prayers and supplications were offered up for the safety of the rest, of whose fate they were ignorant. In this state of suspense they continued for a whole month, during which time the royal visitors remained on board their ship in the harbour, that they might not violate the etiquette of respect due to the prince regent by landing before him. At length a bark

arrived from Bahia, containing the agreeable information that the royal squadron had escaped from the tempest and taken shelter there, and then the party who came to Rio were persuaded by the good citizens to leave their inconvenient residence.

Immediately on his arrival there he laid the foundation stone of that edifice on which was raised the vast superstructure of a new empire. On the 28th of January, 1808, he issued his royal charter, abolishing the old exclusive system, and granting to the people of Brazil the commerce of all foreign nations, friends of the royal crown, and opening to their ships all the ports of the country. As this edict, which, as a Brazilian writer says, "ought to be written in letters of gold," was so important, I send you a copy of it.*

Having performed this great act of justice and policy, he took leave of Bahia, notwithstanding the pressing solicitations of the citizens that he should remain, and their proposal to erect for him a magnificent palace. He arrived off the bar of Rio on the 7th of March, and entered the harbour. Nothing could exceed the extravagance and joy of the citizens at this

* See Appendix, No. I.

event; all the houses were deserted, the hills covered with spectators, and those who could procure boats, sailed out to accompany the royal squadron on the water. On his landing he proceeded to the cathedral to offer up thanks for his safe arrival, and besides other demonstrations of joy, the city was illuminated for nine nights.

Among the first benefits conferred on the country by the arrival of the court was an influx of Portuguese, of intelligence and rank, from the mother country; and the consequence of opening the ports was, the establishment of foreign mercantile houses in the city of Rio. Of these the earliest were the English, many of whom landed soon after the sovereign, and laid the foundation of that numerous and respectable population now resident in the city. Immediately after his Excellency Lord Strangford arrived, and gave a dignity and consequence to the newly opened country in his character of ambassador from a great European power.

Next to opening the ports to foreign enterprise, was the encouragement of it among the natives of the country. By a decree of the 1st of April, 1808, Dom John permitted the free exercise of every kind of industry to all classes of Brazilians. The alvará or decree states, that,

wishing to increase the national wealth, by manufactures, agriculture, and arts, which increase the number of productive hands, and furnish the means of subsistence to those who are led into vice by want and idleness, every prohibition of any kind which existed, was abolished and revoked; and all subjects of Brazil were invited and encouraged to engage in every kind of manufacture to which they were inclined, on a large or limited scale, without any reservation or exception. The importance of this judicious and benevolent decree cannot be duly estimated without considering that, under the late colonial system, permission was scarcely given to manufacture a few articles of coarse wear for slaves, from the cotton which grew in the country.

In this first year also was established that mighty engine of knowledge and power, a printing-press. For three centuries this simple apparatus had been inhibited in Brazil, from its supposed dangerous effects; and it was not till the year 1808 that this great country was permitted to print, I am told, a leaf of a book. The greatest boon the good Prince Regent thought he could confer on his new people was, to establish this means of enlightening them, on their best interests, as connected with arts, sciences,

agriculture, manufactures, and all the benefits he hoped to confer on them. The day, therefore, on which he entered his forty-first year, he celebrated by conferring this boon, and established a royal printing-office, and published a Gazette for the first time in Brazil. Nothing perhaps can mark more decidedly the deplorable state of darkness and ignorance in which this fine country was kept, or the rapid progress the people have since made in the diffusion of knowledge, than this circumstance. It is hardly possible to conceive, that twenty years ago there was not a single newspaper allowed in a country, where now there are thirteen periodicals published, and universally circulated and read, in one city alone.

Immediately after the printing-office, a manufactory of powder was established at the Lagoa de freitas, which still exists there. Printing and gunpowder seem but oddly associated: yet they made their first appearance in Europe much about the same time, and in Brazil they were contemporary introductions. He next established a royal treasury, and a council of finance to regulate the receipts and expenditure of the national income, and created a national bank, consisting of a fund of three millions of crusados, divided into 1200 shares or bank

actions, each valued at one conto of reis, and their charter to continue for twenty years.

In the following year he founded a school of anatomy, surgery, and medicine, annexed to the Royal Military Hospital; also a chemical laboratory, and a quarantine lazaretto on the promontory of Boa Viagem, to obviate the consequences that might result, from the freedom of commerce, by foreign ships introducing contagious disorders from infected ports.

The Indians engaged also the particular attention of the government. Besides the savage tribes scattered over the provinces of Mato Grosso and the remote parts of the country, there still existed in almost the vicinity of the capital, a tribe long distinguished for their ferocity and cannibalisms. These are well known under the name of Botecudos, from an extraordinary deformity, with which they ornament themselves. This consists of a plug of wood, called a botoque, which they insert in an incision made in their lower lip above the chin. They inhabit the banks of the Rio Doce, and laid waste every settlement attempted in that beautiful and fertile region. In 1809, a party of Europeans were sent up the river, and they found 150 farms in ruins, whose proprietors had either perished or fled. Detachments were

accordingly ordered in all directions, to restrain their inroads and to punish their aggressions, and every encouragement was held out, to establish new settlements and civilize them. Every village, consisting of twelve huts of Indians and ten of whites, was to be considered a villa with all its benefits and privileges, and sesmarias or grants of land were made to such as would become cultivators, giving all the privileges and advantages of original donatarios. New roads were then opened to form more easy communications, and considerable effect was produced on these intractable natives. The Purîs, a neighbouring tribe, to the number of 1000, were located in villages, called aldeas; and the arts and industry of civilized life made more progress among them in a few years from this period, than they had before done for so many centuries.

The year 1811 was memorable by the introduction of vaccination into Brazil. Vaccine institutions were established in different provinces, for the promotion of this most beneficent measure, and at Rio the church of Rosario was assigned, as the place for communicating the infection. The people were directed to bring their children here on Thursdays and Saturdays, and two surgeons were appointed to attend.

The idea that the operation was performed in a church tended not a little to remove prejudice, and incline the people to a practice conducted under the auspices of religion. But they hardly required such an inducement. The bexigas, or small-pox, here, as in other parts of America, had made frightful ravages before the introduction of this salutary prophylactic.

On the 12th of October, 1813, a new theatre was opened on the north side of the square, called the Rocio, now the Praça da Constituicão. It was called the Theatre of St. John, in compliment to the Prince Regent, under whose auspices it was completed; and it was opened on the birth-day of his son Dom Pedro. It was an edifice of considerable magnificence, and according with the growing improvement of the city, since the court had established itself there.

In 1814 the French were invited; some residents established themselves at Rio, and the first ships of that nation entered the port in a friendly manner. Their tricoloured flag, as the Brazilians say, which had been the scourge of their little commerce, was now changed for the white, which floated over their ships in the harbour, as an emblem and symbol of peace. They have so increased as far to exceed the English who had arrived before them, and whole

streets are now occupied by their shops and bijouterie.

The condition of the slaves next engaged Dom John's attention. The traffic was to be continued some years longer, but in the meantime he made sundry regulations to alleviate the inhuman sufferings of this unfortunate race, in their passage from the coast of Africa, by cramming so many into a confined space, and by the scanty and unwholesome provision allowed for their support. He regulated the number to be taken on board by the tonnage and accommodation of the ship, and, under severe penalties, enjoined to them all the comfort and alleviation, which religion and humanity demanded; and it is certain that if in this infernal traffic there can be any redeeming quality, the Brazilians are entitled to the reputation of it.

Among other valuable importations to the new country, the Prince Regent had brought with him his books, of which he had in Portugal a large and scarce collection. For their reception the Hospital of the Terceiros do Carmo, in the Rua Detraz do Carmo, was fitted up, and the arrangement was given to two indefatigable and learned men, Joaquim Damaso and José Viegas; and when it was finished, the library was thrown open to the public, in the year 1814.

The year 1815 was distinguished by new public edifices, which the rapid increase of every department of the state required. A new treasury and mint were finished in the Rua Lampedosa, called henceforth the Rua do Erario; and the custom-house becoming altogether too small for the business, which increased with the products of every country of the globe now poured into Brazil, a new one was erected. This edifice, called the Alfandega, situated on the water edge in the Rua Dereita, was soon after to become the theatre of the most painful of the few outrages against humanity, which have marked the transition of Brazil, from the state of a province to that of a kingdom. The number of ships which entered the port with cargoes, had increased in an extraordinary ratio. Before the year 1808 none were seen in the harbour, with the exception of a few admitted to refit or repair damages, and which, under that pretext, contrived to carry on some contraband trade; but in the year after the opening of the ports, 90 strange ships and 760 Portuguese arrived at the custom-house; in 1810, 422 strangers and 1240 Portuguese; and so the commerce proceeded, progressively increasing every year.

In addition to these wise and wholesome improvements, there were sundry others, which it

would, perhaps, be tedious to particularize. By the influx of strangers and Portuguese, the population increased rapidly in different places. New towns were settled in deserts, and old ones were erected into cities; roads of communication were opened through forests which had never before been penetrated, and rivers were navigated towards their source, which boats had never before sailed on; several Indian tribes were humanized and located in villages; and, in effect, the whole face of the country underwent an improvement which no other on record evinced in so short a time.

The manners of the people also displayed a sensible change within a very short period. Many old and respectable creole families, whose habits were as rude as their minds were contracted, from the rustic seclusion in which they had lived, now repaired to the capital, where frequent galas, levees, and birth-day ceremonies at court, attracted crowds together. Here, from mixing with the strangers, both Portuguese and English, they soon rubbed off the rust of retirement, and returned home with new ideas and modes of life, which were again adopted by their neighbours, and so improvement and civilization spread through the country. The commencement of this new state of things was perceptible

in the town of Rio itself. From the period of its first improvement by the discovery of the mines, until the arrival of the court, little was effected. Some spots intended for streets and squares had been marked out, but they remained disgusting receptacles of filth which the negroes cast there; and the vicinity of the town and the islands of the Bay continued in their primitive state of mato or thicket. But from the moment the court landed, every thing was changed; new streets and squares were built, the islands and hills were covered with villas, and Rio assumed that lovely aspect of nature, improved by the hand of art, which now renders it so striking an object.

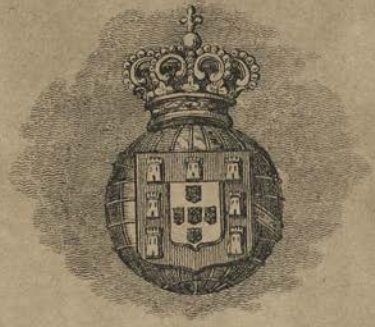
When all this was effected, it was determined to erect it into a separate state, and as the condition of a province had ceased, so also should its name; a decree therefore was issued on the 16th of December, 1815, declaring that from the date of its publication, the state of Brazil should be elevated to the dignity of a kingdom, and thenceforth called "the Kingdom of Brazil," and should form, with those in Europe, the United Kingdoms of Portugal, Algarves, and Brazil. Of this decree, which was the next important epocha in the history of this new country, I send you also a copy.*

* See Appendix, No. II.

The effect of this new state of things on the Brazilians was electric. It was felt, and expressed by a spontaneous illumination all over the country; and, as they say, from the Amazons to the River of Plate was one continued blaze. The cameras of the different cities sent deputies to Rio, to convey their sense of gratitude to the sovereign for this unhoped-for boon; thanksgivings were offered up in all the churches, and other indications of great and lively satisfaction were evinced. It added not a little to the pleasure, that all the foreign sovereigns assembled at the Congress of Vienna approved of this measure; the assurance of Lord Castlereagh, that it was the opinion of his Royal Highness the Prince Regent of England, that it was greatly calculated to promote the prosperity of the country, gave great satisfaction.

Immediately after the consummation of this event, the Queen, Dona Maria the First, died at Rio; but the Prince Regent deferred the acclamation of his succession until the expiration of a year of mourning for his mother, and in the mean time adopted suitable arms to designate the new kingdom, which were settled by a royal decree,—that as Alphonso III. had joined the arms of Algarves to those of Portugal when he united the kingdoms, so should those of Brazil

ARMS of the EMPIRE
of
BRAZIL.



ARMS of the UNITED KINGDOMS
of
PORTUGAL, the ALGARVES, &
BRAZIL.

be now added; that they should consist of an armillary sphere of gold in a field azure, and that an escutcheon, containing the Quinas of Portugal and the Seven Castles of Algarves, should be placed on the sphere, surmounted by the royal crown,—which arms should be borne on the standards and coins of the country: these arms have been since changed, but almost all the copper coin in circulation, particularly the vintems, still bear them.

The first serious symptom of disturbance from political causes, appeared in Pernambuco. Hitherto the Brazilians, conciliated by the kind and benevolent proceedings of the king, had shown, with but few and trifling exceptions, the most submissive acquiescence; but on the 5th of March, 1817, news arrived at Rio of an insurrection at Pernambuco. Pernambuco seems to have imbibed a strong republican spirit, from various causes, founded in past and present circumstances. In 1629, the Dutch took possession of all the northern parts of Brazil, including Salvador and Pernambuco; and for several years were masters of those extensive regions, till dispossessed by a powerful army of Spaniards, amounting to 12,000 men. Though expelled from the country, these sturdy republicans left behind them much of their

feelings and principles, which only wanted an occasion to call them into activity. When the revolutionary blaze burst out in South America in modern times, it found among the population of this part of Brazil, inflammable materials, which readily caught the flame from the Spanish territories in their vicinity; and the people at once entered into all the measures of their neighbours. Their object was to unite the northern provinces into a separate republic, and a plan of insurrection was matured to effect their purpose; it broke out on the following occasion. A captain of artillery, named De Barros Lima, having been reprehended by his commander, Brigadier Manoel Joaquim, drew his sword and ran him through the body, and immediately the regiment which had been previously prepared, burst into open rebellion. Colonel Alexander Thomaz rushed among them to bring them to their duty, when they immediately fired on him, and killed him also. The revolutionists now assembled, called on the people to join them, and caused the tocsin to be sounded from the bells of the churches. They then trampelled under foot the standards of Portugal, formed a provisional government of five persons, and proclaimed Pernambuco an independent country. The old

governor, Caetano Pinto, shut himself up in the fortress, where he was besieged by the insurgents, and on the following day obliged to capitulate. He was embarked on board a small vessel, and sent to Rio to communicate the news of the revolution. It did not appear that the Brazilians, in general, felt at this time any sympathy with the insurgents, though the flame of insurrection spread all over the province; for the people of Bahia immediately fitted out a squadron of armed merchant ships, and the governor, the Conde dos Arcos, despatched a land force to suppress the insurrection; while at Rio, all people pressed forward to offer their services. A spontaneous donation of 500,000 crusados were contributed by individuals, and a fleet with a considerable body of troops, and among them a regiment of volunteers, was promptly sent out on the 4th of May following.

The division from Bahia, from its immediate proximity, first commenced its operations, and was joined by numbers of Pernambucans who disapproved of the insurrection. For some time the affairs of the insurgents seemed to proceed prosperously. A part of their army, called the southern division, was particularly distinguished for its success, and a large body of guerillas, formed by Domingo Jozé Martins, a civilian,

who had taken an early part in the insurrection, and headed by Cavalcante, a gentleman of rank and fortune, and a priest named Sonto, greatly harassed the royalists; and when the army of Bahia approached, to attack Reciffe, they did not wait their arrival, but advanced to meet them to the plains of Ipojuco, where they hoped to encounter the Bahian troops, fatigued with their march. The result was fatal to them, the insurgents were totally defeated; some fled to the matos, where they lay concealed, but many were wounded, and taken prisoners; among the rest, the famous Dr. Martins, who acted as second in command. The insurgents in the city immediately dissolved their provisional government, and submitted to the fleet of merchantmen sent against them from Bahia; and, by the time the royal expedition had arrived from Rio, every thing was restored to order and quiet at Pernambuco. Much severity was exercised against the unfortunate revolutionists, and their principal leaders, Martins, Mendonça, and Joaquim de Almeida, were hanged.

The time was now arrived when the hitherto Prince Regent was to take upon himself the title of monarch, and the new state of Brazil was to be distinguished by the acclamation of its first king. The 5th of February, 1818, was

appointed for the ceremony. The mode of enthroning monarchs by acclamation is among the most ancient usages of the Portuguese people, and their first monarch was so crowned. Dom Alfonso Henriques, son of Count Henriques, born about the year 1110, governed Portugal for eleven years, under the title of Principe de Portugal; but after his victory over the moors in the Campo d'Ourique, he was acclaimed king by his soldiers, by the title of Alfonso I. The mode of this acclamação consisted in placing the chief, standing, on a buckler, which was then raised over the heads of the soldiers, and in this position they proclaimed him king; and I saw in the palace at Rio, a fine and spirited painting, representing this ceremony. From this time, all future monarchs of Portugal were crowned by acclamation, though the circumstance of being raised on a shield had fallen into disuse.

The preparations for crowning in this way the first European monarch ever elected in America, were attended with suitable magnificence. A grand veranda was erected in the palace square, 250 palms in length, in which the ceremony was performed. On the day previous, the whole of the constituted authorities assembled in full costume, and proceeded to the palace of St. Christovão, to

congratulate the sovereign on his approaching elevation; and, on the day of acclamation, all the military from Bahia, and other places, joined to those of Rio, with a concourse of strangers of all nations, mixed with Brazilians, filled the square and contiguous streets.

The monarch, after the celebration of mass in the chapel royal, entered the veranda in his robes. The king at arms proclaimed silence in these words: "Hear, hear, and be attentive!" and the desembargador of the palace addressed him in a speech suitable to the occasion; then proceeding to a stool, on which stood a cushion, Dom John knelt down on it, and taking his sceptre in his left hand and laying his right on the crucifix, the coronation oath was administered to him by the secretary of state, while the bishops of Goyaz and Mozambique stood by as witnesses. The alferes mor, or great standard-bearer, then unrolled the sacred standard of Henry Alfonso, the founder of the Portuguese throne, and all the nobles and grandees repeated the oath. When it was reported to the king that they had done so, it was proclaimed aloud, and the alferes mor, again unfurling the standard, made acclamation with a loud voice, "Royal, royal, royal, by the very high and very powerful Senhor, King Dom John VI.

our lord."* This acclamation was repeated in front of the veranda, and the people below answered by a burst of music, peals of bells, explosions of artillery, deafening shouts, discharges of fire-works, and such an universal display of extravagant joy, that, as my author, the worthy Gonçalves dos Sanctos, says, "it would require the pencil of Zeuxis and the odes of Pindar to describe; and if any thing on earth could be compared to the joys of heaven, it was that moment."

The last public act of Dom John was proclaiming the new constitution of the Cortes of Portugal in Brazil, in which his son Dom Pedro, who now began to take an active part in the affairs of the country, so much distinguished himself.

The emperor Dom Pedro was born at Lisbon, on the 12th of October, 1798; he was the second son of Dom John VI. and of Carlota Joaquina, daughter of Charles IV. of Spain; but by the premature death of his elder brother, Antonio, he became heir-presumptive to the crown. He was of a weakly temperament when a child, but showed early some of that vivacity

* Real, real, real, pelo muito alto et muito poderoso Senhor Rei, D. João VI. nosso Senhor.

of character which has since distinguished him. He was educated by the Padre Antonio d'Arrabida, an intelligent ecclesiastic, who early impressed him with sentiments of religion, for which he is still distinguished; but his education was in nothing else remarkable, except that, in common with his sisters, he acquired some knowledge of Latin, which he has not yet forgotten. His tutor is at present Bishop of Anamuria, *in partibus*, and resides in the convent of San Antonio, where I visited him. He is a man about sixty, tall and thin, with a very strongly marked countenance, resembling the idea one conceives of an Italian monk of the 16th century. He wears a black stuff robe and cowl, with a gold cross suspended from his neck, and large diamond rings on his fingers. He speaks French well, and it was the language of our communication. I found him remarkably urbane and gentlemanlike in his manner, and, with a ready and unaffected courtesy, he informed me on every subject about which I inquired. He spoke of the royal family and the early years of his pupil, and seemed to take a pleasure in recurring to the events of these times. He is now superintendent of the education of the emperor's children, and is besides librarian to the imperial library, where he is editing a splendid work on

the botany of Rio Janeiro, of which he presented me some of the plates.

When the affairs of Portugal became critical, and involved in French intrigues, it was resolved on by his father to send Dom Pedro to Brazil, with his tutor, under the name of the Prince of Beira, that this important branch of the royal family should be preserved from a convulsion which might crush the name in Europe; but the persuasion of his excellency Lord Strangford, the British minister at Lisbon, and the approach of the French army under Junot, determined the Regent himself to depart, and he embarked on board the Portuguese vessel of war the Principe do Brazil, accompanied by the rest of the fleet. Dom Pedro shewed himself on this occasion a lively, energetic boy. He took pleasure in attending to the working of the ship, with an activity and mechanical dexterity which still distinguish him. When not so engaged, he was seen to sit apart at the foot of the mainmast, reading the voyage of Æneas in Virgil, impressed, as he said, with the similarity of his fate to his own. The voyage was tedious, from violent and contrary winds, and, as they had suddenly departed, their conveniences were soon exhausted. Among other privations, it is asserted, that Dom Pedro and

his brother's stock of linen was but scanty, and it was found necessary to cut up some bed-clothes to convert them into shirts; so that when the emperor first landed in his future dominions, he was clad, not indeed, like one of the aborigines, in a blanket, but in a sheet.

Dom Pedro was ten years old when he set his foot on the shore of the New World. The first care of his father was to supply him with a competent tutor, and he fixed on John Rademak, who had been ambassador from Portugal to Denmark, and from his residence in different parts of the continent, spoke with fluency almost every language in Europe. He was supposed to be every way fitted for the task he had undertaken, and the young prince was about to profit by the instructions of his gifted preceptor, when Rademak suddenly died. It was generally rumoured, and I heard it often affirmed, that he died by poison. He had a slave, who had formed an attachment for a person in the neighbourhood of a residence from which he was about to remove; this she determined to prevent, and to this end purchased some wine at a venda, into which she infused poison, and then placed it beside her master at dinner, who drank it without suspicion. I have heard it, however, from one who visited him in his last

moments at his house at Boto Fogo, that he died of a wounded spirit and broken heart, in consequence of some ill treatment he imagined he had received from his supposed rival and enemy, the prince's former tutor.

Deprived thus unexpectedly of his preceptor, the prince did not seem solicitous for another, and without any fixed plan of education his attention vacillated between many objects. He showed an early taste for mechanics, and, like those of his great namesake of Russia, specimens of his early ingenuity in this way are still preserved. He made the model of a ship of war, and completed a billiard-table, on which latter he now exhibits as much skill in playing the game as in manufacturing the wood. But the pursuit to which he most devoted himself was music, for which he conceived, at an early age, a strong predilection, and showed a decided talent. He not only learned to play on a variety of instruments, but he composed, I have been informed, much of the music for his father's chapel; and the most popular piece now in Brazil, both the words and music of which are of his composition, attests his talent.

These sedentary employments he varied by a very active life abroad. He was a very bold and skilful horseman, and at an early age drove

a cabriolet with four horses in hand, an exercise which I generally saw him perform every day, with a dashing dexterity. He was, moreover, ardently fond of the chase, and pursued it with eagerness and intrepidity, in places of which a European can have no conception. This difficulty is well described by a French writer, who calls penetrating into a Brazilian forest, breaking the chain which bound him to his fellowmen.*

When arrived at a marriageable age, and the peace of Europe had again established that intercourse which war had suspended, his father formed the project of uniting him to a princess of the house of Austria, and the Archduchess Leopoldina, daughter of the Emperor Francis I. and sister to Maria Louisa, late Empress of France, was fixed upon as his wife. The marriage was negotiated by the Marquis of Marialva, the

* La chasse au sein de vastes solitudes du Brézil, n'est point celle de nos riantes campagnes; à peine l'homme a-t-il perdu de vue le toit de son habitation, qu'il a, pour ainsi dire, rompu la chaine que se le liait à ses semblables. Aux yeux de chasseur Brazilien se deploit de toutes partes, un rideau d'arbres aussi vieux que la terre, portant jusqu'au ciel un tete gigantesque, et si etroitement uni entre eux par de plantes rampantes et epineuses, que le moindre animal cherche en vain une route à travers cette immense cloison de feuillages. C'est pourtant ce mur qu'il faut percer, c'est au milieu de se chaos inconnu a l'homme, qu'il doit se jeter, c'est à sol encore tout empreint de l'humidité de la creation, qu'il doit fouler d'un pied adventereux.

Portuguese ambassador at the Austrian court. It was celebrated by proxy on the 13th of May, 1817, and that day was fixed on as auspicious, because it was that of the advancement of his grandmother to the throne, and also the birth-day of his father Dom John. On the 5th of November following the vessel arrived, bearing the young queen, who at once secured golden opinions from all the Brazilians. The princess was described to me, by people who saw her on her arrival, as a very interesting figure. A person not tall, but well-proportioned, dark blue eyes, regular features, very fair, with a good complexion, which, with her light flaxen hair, formed a strong contrast to the dusky hue and coal-black tresses of all the native ladies round her. But, above all, she possessed an air of great good-nature and kindness of disposition, which always distinguished her during her short life. These personal advantages, with a gentle temper and an affectionate heart, rendered her an object of great interest as well to her husband as to her people.

The disturbances now burst out at Pernambuco, and as Dom Pedro had evinced a liberal feeling in the political changes which Brazil had undergone, it was insinuated by his enemies he had some privity in this affair, and the

suspicions of his father were excited. On this occasion, however, to justify himself from such injurious imputations, he raised a battalion of all the domestics and people employed about the court, and conferred on it the name of the "Volunteers of the Prince Royal." He clothed them at his own expense, disciplined them by his own exertions, and offered them to his father, as the first forces to take the field. Notwithstanding this, the popular feeling which had begun to evince itself in his favour, was suppressed by every means, and some people who had cried "vivas!" for him at the theatre, were sent to prison as disaffected.

Immediately after the revolution took place at Oporto, and soon spread over Portugal. This excited a strong sensation in Brazil, and Dom Pedro took a decided part in its favour. The councils held, were conducted with the greatest irresolution and disorder, by men who wanted energy to take a decided part, and Dom Pedro was excluded from their deliberations. On one occasion, he suddenly entered unnoticed, charged the members with intending only to deceive the people, and the sitting was dissolved in great confusion. On the 18th of February, the king announced his intention to take into consideration the proposed constitution, and published

a manifesto, that he would send his son, Dom Pedro, to Lisbon, to treat with the cortes on the subject; but this temporizing expedient had no effect in calming the public mind.

On the 25th of February, 1821, the city of Rio was thrown into the greatest state of alarm and agitation, by the auxiliary division of Portuguese. When the disturbance had taken place at Pernambuco, and all the disposable force of Rio was despatched to suppress it, it was thought expedient to send to Portugal for an additional supply of troops, and on the 18th of October, 1817, they arrived, disembarked at the bridge of S. Christovão, and were encamped in front of Boa Vista. They consisted of four battalions of the line, one of light infantry, and a brigade of artillery. The revolutionary movement at Pernambuco had been suppressed before their arrival; but though rendering no service to the country or government, they assumed an air of insolent superiority in every thing, treated the whole community among whom they sojourned as disaffected, and acted towards them as if they only came to trample on and keep them under; they required that Brazilian officers above the rank of captain should be dismissed, and their duties filled by Portuguese alone; the soldiers paraded and mounted

guard in splendid uniforms, while the natives in the same service appeared in rags, with wood in their musket-locks, as if they could not be trusted with flints; and in effect, it appeared to the people as if this "auxiliary division" had it in design to extinguish altogether that feeling of consequence which the people of the country had cherished since Brazil was erected into a kingdom, and to reduce it again to that state of provincial insignificance from which it had just emerged. Complaints of mutual aggression were continually made, and dislike grew into open enmity. The soldiers now took arms in their barracks, tumultuary groups of the people wandered about in a high state of excitement through the streets, and every thing seemed to announce an immediate commotion. The ministers retired in consternation to the palace of S. Christovão, to consult with the king, who was there; but Dom Pedro, mounting his horse, rode instantly to the barracks of the soldiers, where he caused them to lay aside their arms; he then ran through the public places, addressed the different groups of the people, and by long and earnest persuasions induced them all to return to their own homes; and having performed this important duty by his single personal exertions,

he repaired to the palace, to report that all was perfectly quiet.

On the next day, the auxiliary division marched out of their barracks, and took possession of the Rocio square, in which the theatre is situated, and again every thing seemed to threaten an explosion in the city. The camera assembled in the saloon of the theatre, and the people filled the streets. The constitution established in Portugal was earnestly desired by the Brazilians and the troops, and it was supposed that the acceptance of it by the king would at once reconcile and amalgamate all parties. This the prince represented to his father in the strongest manner, and the well-disposed monarch, who seemed to wish for nothing but what might be for the real benefit of his subjects, allowed his son to act in the emergency as he thought most advisable. He immediately rode at full speed to the Rocio, and announced to all he met the king's acquiescence. He then arranged it so that the Brazilian troops should join with the auxiliaries, and meet the assembled people; and a deputation of the whole was formed to wait on himself, and request that the ministers should be dismissed, and the constitution proclaimed. Having again conferred with his father, he presented

himself at the balcony of the theatre, which looks into the square, holding in his hand the pen with which he had drawn out the list of new ministers, displayed a paper containing their names, and informed the people that the king had acceded to the constitution; he then took the following oath in his name: "I swear, in the name of the king, my father and lord, veneration and respect for our holy religion, and to observe, keep, and support, for ever, the constitution as it is established by the cortes in Portugal," which the king himself ratified afterwards at the window of the palace. The army and the people were now clamorous to see the king, and Dom Pedro rode to the palace to request his father would comply with their wishes. The timid but good-natured monarch acquiesced, and as he was proceeding to the Rocio, he met a detachment of the mob, who, like their brethren of England, proceeded to unyoke the horses, and harness themselves to the carriage. The king, altogether unacquainted with this ceremony, was greatly alarmed. I have heard from those who were present, that he grew as pale as death, and fell back in the carriage, fainting with terror and dismay. The horrors of the French revolution were before his eyes, and he expected that the fate of its

unfortunate monarch, who resembled himself in irresolution and goodness of heart, would soon be his own.

Not so Dom Pedro: he showed an ardour and energy through the whole of this trying transaction that marked a decided and intrepid character. He rode forward, sword in hand, from place to place, took the command of the troops, and killed two horses under him by his continued exertions. Whatever may have been his private sentiments, this public conduct was the only one left him to pursue. It was impossible at the time to stem the torrent of public opinion; he acted more prudently by directing it, and becoming the idol of the people. Similar popular movements took place at Bahia and other principal towns, and in a short time the constitutional government of Portugal was recognized, with apparent enthusiasm, all over Brazil.

The next evening was, as usual on all popular movements in Brazil, distinguished by a brilliant opera; but the king was so exhausted by the exertions and alarms of the day before, that he was unable to attend; and on this occasion the people exhibited a trait of national usage rather singular. The portraits of the king and queen went to the theatre as proxies for the

originals; they were exhibited in the front of the box, and received from the people the same homage and applause as if the persons they represented were really present. In countries where a certain sanctity and virtue is supposed to be communicated to a picture or image, which merely represents the person, in whom these qualities are supposed to have resided, this homage to paint and canvass may be accounted for.

The king, harassed, it should appear, by storms and agitations, which now began to shake his adopted country, so different from the calm submission and grateful respect of the people, by which his residence for several years had been distinguished; and unable any longer to control or direct the temper of his formerly tractable subjects in America, determined to comply with the invitation he received from the cortes at Lisbon, and to return to Europe; and on the 7th of March, he published a proclamation, announcing his intention, together with an order that such deputies to the cortes as might be elected at the time of his departure, should sail with him, and that the rest should follow as soon as they were ready. Tranquillity seemed now restored, and the people had no pretext or apparent wish to disturb it; when an

incident occurred which excites the most painful reflections, as it is one of the most base and atrocious to be found even in the records of revolutions.

While preparing to depart, it was proposed to call the electors of the deputies together, to submit to them a plan prepared for the government of Brazil, in order to have their opinion, and, if approved of, their sanction,—the king proposing, with his usual wish to conciliate, that if any part of the plan of the regency was disapproved of, he would adopt such alteration as they suggested. The electors on this invitation were regularly convened by the Ouvidor of the Commarca, who acted on such occasion as our high sheriff, and assembled at the Exchange.

When the opening of the ports of Brazil had invited the commerce of the world, and the increase of trade at Rio had rendered a new Exchange necessary, it was resolved to build one on a scale commensurate with the wants of the port. The place fixed on was in the Rua Direita, beside the Custom-house; a number of old edifices were thrown down, and an area, open from the sea to the street, was cleared for the building. It was commenced in October, 1819, and opened for business in the May following. The house was 160 palms long

and 145 broad; the floor, elevated six steps above the level of the street, was entered and passed through by four large arched gates on opposite sides, the two principal opening to the street and the sea. The interior had a central dome, with four transepts issuing from it at right angles, forming a cross, extending the length and breadth of the building, with galleries at each end, supported by twenty-two doric fluted columns. The *coup d'œil* of this hall was very striking, as it had a classical air, very unlike the dull and heavy public edifices in every other part of the city. Statues of the four quarters of the world indicated the extent to which the trade of Brazil had been thrown open, and Commerce, Navigation, Industry, and Agriculture, the arts which it cherished and encouraged. As the king always wished to distinguish his birthdays by some act affording agreeable recollections, he appointed the 13th of May for the opening of this edifice, and it formed a kind of jubilee in Rio. The king took his barge, landed at the sea portal, and visited the hall, which was brilliantly illuminated. The British merchants deputed one of their body, who addressed him in the following words:—"Senhor, it is incumbent on the British merchants, resident in the city, to congratulate

your Majesty on this occasion, and to thank you for the protection and favour you have always afforded to their commerce. I, with them, sincerely pray that you may live many years, to animate that commerce, and render happy those who live under your prosperous reign.". Having made a suitable answer, the king, with his family, sat down to a collation prepared for the occasion; which was followed by a ball, and they departed amidst acclamations and music.

As this building formed a distinguished era in the annals of Brazil, indicating the great political changes the country had undergone, and the vast influx of wealth it had acquired, it was a temple to which they attached a kind of veneration; and here the first electors convened in the country, were determined to hold their important meeting. Several of the citizens combined to add to its ornament on the occasion, at their own private expense; one covered the seats with velvet, another sent silver candlesticks, and every one was eager to contribute to the decoration and display of the first national assembly of Brazil. It was naturally to be expected that much irregularity should occur in a meeting entirely unused to form, and unacquainted with the extent of its powers. The

debates, therefore, were turbulent, and some of their demands extravagant. They proposed that the Constitution of Spain should be the model of that of Portugal, to which the king assented. A rumour was spread that the Portuguese troops were coming to disperse them; but their commander, being summoned before them, assured them it was not so. It was affirmed that the king was about to carry off with him a large treasure from the country, and had actually embarked a quantity of public property, even the funds of some charitable institutions. It was well known, that prodigality and rapacity had been the besetting sins of the government of Brazil, and this rumour gained implicit credit. It was moved, therefore, that the vessels should be searched, and orders were sent to the commanders of the forts of Santa Cruz and Lage, to stop the ships of the squadron, if they attempted to sail.

It was now past midnight, and some of the electors had retired; but, from the importance of their proceedings, the hall was still crowded, when the edifice was suddenly surrounded by a regiment of soldiers, with fixed bayonets, and loaded muskets. Without the smallest notice of their approach, or any intimation to the people to disperse, they rushed on the unarmed

meeting, poured a volley among them, and then charged with their bayonets. Nothing could be more horrible than the scene of carnage which followed—a number of brutal soldiers assassinating unarmed citizens in a closed-up room. Those who were not killed or wounded, attempted to escape through the windows; some were crushed to death by the fall, and some fled forward into the sea, and were drowned. Meantime, the soldiers deliberately proceeded to plunder; they robbed the dead and wounded of their watches and valuables, and stripped the room of the plate and candlesticks, and, having thus glutted themselves with blood and plunder, dispersed.

I have conversed with several persons who were present on this occasion, who informed me of the fate of some of their friends. One man was a Brazilian, doing business in an English house. Hearing a bustle near the door, he stood up to see what was the matter, and was shot through the heart by a soldier, who put his musket close to his breast. Another was a young man, who, tired with the length of the debate, had lain down, and fallen asleep; in that position he was pinned to the bench by a soldier who stood over him, and thrust his bayonet through his back. An Englishman, of the

name of Burnet, had been employed as caretaker of the hall; he was attacked by a fellow who thrust his bayonet at his belly. Providentially he had in his waistcoat pocket a large snuff-box, and the point of the bayonet passed through the lid, but not the bottom, so his life was saved. About thirty persons were killed or wounded, and were found dead or dying on the spot, besides others who had disappeared, some of whom were supposed to be drowned, and many others were hurt more or less severely.

The next day the event was as if it had never happened. Such was the debasing terror of the people, that no inquiry was attempted to be made as to the instigators of the measure, or the number of victims they had sacrificed. The king has been acquitted by all; his habits and feelings were acknowledged to have been altogether repugnant to such a deed of blood. Some consider it an act of the Conde dos Arcos, whose unrelenting severity had been already exercised on the insurgents of Pernambuco. He was sometime after dismissed from the situation he held in the government, and sent home to Portugal; and so odious did he become to the people, that they would not allow him to land at Bahia, where a short time before he had been

so popular. Others, and the greater number of those I have conversed with, attribute it to Dom Pedro himself. When apprised of the proceedings of the electors, he hastened, they say, to the Campo de Sta Anna at midnight, and taking with him the regiment of caçadores,' he sent them forward by the Rua d'Alfandega, and other streets which led to the Custom-house, with orders to disperse the meeting; the manner of doing it was their own sanguinary act. To whomever it is to be attributed, you will agree with me, that a more base and cowardly assassination was never perpetrated.

Such was the horror conceived by the citizens at this event, that the place where it happened was totally abandoned. No merchant would afterwards enter the Exchange to transact any business, and it remained deserted like a haunted house, the perforated walls and blood-stained floors continuing for a long time melancholy memorials of the massacre. These were, however, at length removed, the walls were repaired and painted, and the whole again elegantly fitted up; still no one would enter it, and when I visited it, with a friend, to examine its localities, this fine hall was converted into an iron store, filled with all manner of lumber. Some of the doors and windows

were bricked up; and the light and elegant building, which used to be daily crowded with all the respectable merchants of Rio, was then a dirty vault, frequented only by negroes, and filled with old iron.

When this affair was mentioned in the cortes at Lisbon, it was considered only a just chastisement on the turbulent provincials of Brazil; and one of the sufferers having displayed a handkerchief stained with his blood, as evidence of the fact, the whole assembly burst out laughing. These men, so clamorous for liberty themselves, were determined that their fellow-subjects of America should not share in it, and this was soon evinced by their conduct.

The king, after this melancholy event, hastened his departure. He left his son Prince Regent, with a council of three ministers, and, in the event of his death, the succession to fall to the Princess Leopoldina. He addressed the troops, and hoped to ensure their attachment by promising an increase of pay, but he left nothing in the treasury for that purpose. He embarked on the 24th of May, and many of the nobles and opulent men accompanied him. This was a serious evil, as the money withdrawn from the country, and brought back by these returned emigrants, amounted to more than fifty millions

of crusados, which was deeply felt in Brazil, and the cause of much of the discontent and calamity which followed.

Nothing could form a stronger contrast than the entrance of Dom John VI. into Brazil, and his departure. He was received with the enthusiasm of respect and love, which admiration for the person of their king, and pity for his exiled fortunes, inspired. All his first acts were acknowledged as the bounteous boons of a benevolent being superior to man, and are so spoken of in the contemporary publications; and, certainly, no nation was ever more indebted to a sovereign than the Americans to him, for the wise, beneficent, and liberal decrees which marked the first years of his sojourn among them. He gradually laid the foundation of that independence which they now enjoy, and fitted them for it by a succession of acts which tended to improve and enrich the country, and enlighten the people. But he was altogether unfitted, by the meekness of his character, and the timidity and irresolution of his measures, to control or direct the spirit of independence when once excited. His kindness was forgotten, his understanding laughed at, his measures thwarted; the halo of respect and veneration which encircled his person was

entirely dissipated, and he lived to see his subjects endeavour to stop him like a fugitive, who was carrying away clandestinely a property that did not belong to him.

Immediately after the departure of the king, the question of the entire independence of Brazil on Portugal began to be agitated, and the determination that it should not again be reduced to the situation of a province. These feelings were strongly excited by the conduct of the mother country. The prince regent had met with some opposition in different parts of Brazil, where the people declared themselves independent of Rio de Janeiro, and amenable only to the cortes and government of Portugal. At Villa Rica and Maranhão the cortes was proclaimed, and no notice taken of the prince; and even the troops refused to acknowledge him if they did not receive the promised pay, which he had not the means of giving. But the disturbance at St. Paul's was more serious. The caçadores took up arms, and declared they would not lay them down till their demands were satisfied; and the militia and people, assembled before the camera or town-hall, demanded a provisional junta for the government of the province; and that José Bonafacio d'Andrada de Sylva, an accomplished and patriotic citizen, a native of

St. Paul's, and highly popular, should be president, and a deputation was sent to invite him. The standard of the camera was soon after displayed at one window, and Andrada appeared at the other. He accepted the situation, the junta was installed, and having exhorted the people to peace, and submission to the laws, and the prince as Regent, they dispersed, and all was quiet. This was a most important event for the prince: it caused his disputed authority to be recognised in the most influential province of Brazil, and it was the foundation of an ardent attachment, which for some time afterwards subsisted between him and the family of Andrada.

When the state and feeling of the people of Brazil were known at Lisbon, the cortes immediately issued their sovereign orders; and on the 9th of December, the brig Dom Sebastião entered the port of Rio, bearing two decrees; one to organize a provisional government, which should reduce the country again to the condition of a province; and the other, ordering the immediate return of the prince regent to Portugal, on the pretext of travelling through Europe for his improvement. These decrees the prince prepared to obey, and the Union frigate was ordered to be got ready for his departure.

It was now that the Brazilians seemed moved

as one man, by a feeling in which all equally participated. Hitherto partial ebullitions of independence and republicanism had shown themselves; but, as the objects of those who displayed them, were supposed to be wild and visionary, they met with but little sympathy among the great mass of the people. On this occasion, however, there seemed to be but one sentiment universally in Brazil; and that was, that it should not be again reduced to the state of a colony of another country, its commerce restricted, its ports closed, and its intercourse with other nations regulated by the narrow and exclusive policy which had hitherto kept them a secluded people, and in utter ignorance of the rest of the world.

Among the engines by which popular feeling was at this time excited, and kept up, was the press, which teemed with publications, of which I procured a large collection. One of them was called "O Despertador Braziliense," the Brazilian Alarum, which seemed to have had a powerful effect. It was written, I was told, by an eminent civilian, O Doutor Fran. de Franza Miranda. I send you the following passage on the subject of the decrees, as a specimen of the style and reasoning of these young people:—"The measure is illegal, impious, and

impolitic. Illegal, because it has been decreed without the co-operation of our representatives; consequently, without any manifestation of the national will. Impious, because it shows the contemptuous indifference with which the cortes disposes of our existence, as if we were a band of miserable slaves, created to be subject to the caprice, and abandoned to the will of their masters; and not a co-equal kingdom as we are, more powerful, and possessing more resources than Portugal herself. Impolitic, because it is precisely at the moment when our union will be most advantageous to our allied country, that she chooses to fill us with disgust, and to render to the eyes of the whole world, our separation to be a matter both of justice and necessity." This decided, and hitherto unheard of language, was received with astonishing avidity. The pamphlet was every where circulated through the country, and all classes adopted its sentiments.

The first portion of the people who came to a decided resolution on this subject, were the Paulistas, and the Mineiros, who originally formed but one province, and resembled each other in spirit and independence. They had been the earliest colonized, and were the richest, as well as the most intelligent, portion of the

country. An address was drawn up in their name by Joze d'Andrada; it contained the following passage: "How dare those deputies of Portugal, without deigning to wait for the concurrence of those of Brazil, legislate on a matter which involves the most sacred interests of the entire kingdom? How dare they deprive Brazil of her privy council, her court of conscience, her exchequer, her board of commerce, her court of requests, and so many other institutions, just established among us, and which promised us such future benefits? Where now must the people apply on their civil and judicial concerns? Must they once more, after enjoying for twelve years the advantages of speedy justice, seek it in a foreign land, across two thousand leagues of ocean, among the procrastinations and corruptions of Lisbon tribunals, where the oppressed suitor is abandoned by hope and life?" This address concluded with a request, that the prince would not abandon Brazil, nor suffer himself to be "led about like a school-boy, surrounded by masters and spies,"* and it was followed by another, presented by the camera of Rio, breathing the same sentiment.

As the prince had not yet expressed his sentiments, the Portuguese troops, who entered

* Fazer viajar como hum Pupillo, rodeado de aios e de espias.

into all the feelings and assumed all the consequence of the mother-country, talked without disguise of his being obliged to perform what they called his duty, in obeying the mandates of the cortes; but the prince determined at once to decide on his line of conduct, so he replied to the deputation of the camera, that "as it appeared to be the general wish and for the general good, he would remain." This declaration was received with huzzas, followed by discharges of artillery and fireworks, which soon announced the news in every direction. A brilliant opera, as usual, succeeded, and the prince and princess appeared full dressed in their box; orators of all kinds had speeches ready, and when called on, appeared on the stage and delivered them: and it was on this evening, I believe, that the celebrated national hymn was for the first time played and sung. The prince, as I mentioned to you, is an excellent musician, and now proved himself a poet: he composed both the words and air of a song for this occasion, of which the following is a translation.

"Children of your country, prizing
High your honoured parents' weal,
See the star of freedom rising,
Radiant o'er your loved Brazil.

Bold Brazilians, far repelling
Fear that timid dastards feel,
Liberty our land shall dwell in,
Or our grave shall be Brazil."*

When the prince's determination was known, the Portuguese troops spoke openly of taking him by force to the ship sent for him, and a plan was organized for the purpose while he was at the opera. The theatre was surrounded by soldiers, who had orders to seize his person and convey him to the vessel, which was immediately to set sail before any notification of it should transpire. But the prince looking out of one of the windows of the corridor, and seeing an unusual number of persons, immediately became suspicious that it was for some purpose with which he was not acquainted, and he instantly directed General Caretti to order them to their quarters. The alarm was instantly spread; the Brazilian troops ran to arms; and the Portuguese, irresolute and unprepared for this, retired without making any attempt. They still, however, maintained a menacing attitude: it was determined that something decided must be done; and it was resolved to send them immediately back to Portugal. The troops, however, to the number

* See Appendix, No. III.

of 700, took up a position on the castle hill, commanding the principal streets, and from hence with four pieces of artillery they threatened to batter down the city. Here they expected to be joined by the troops at S. Christovão, amounting to about 500 men. They did not join them; but the reason they assigned for not doing so, was a subject of much more alarm to the Brazilians. They said their duty was to attend the person of the prince; and from that moment he was considered a prisoner in their hands.

This state of things could not be endured, and the whole city was on the alert. The greatest exertions were made, without a moment's cessation, all night. The citizens sent their horses and mules to convey arms and ammunition; expresses were despatched in every direction. The militia and all the Brazilian troops in the neighbourhood crowded into the town and assembled at the Campo de Sta. Anna, and by sun-rise in the morning there appeared drawn up there, a force of between 4 and 5000 men, headed by the prince, and prepared for action. The Brazilian troops now formed a cordon round the base of the hill on which the Portuguese had taken their station, and cut them off from all communication

from below, and from supplies of provision, which they had neglected to provide; so, finding themselves in a hopeless situation, and all chance of success against a whole population destroyed, they submitted to the terms proposed to them, and agreed to be transported across the Bay to the Praya Grande, an open and level plain on the opposite side. It was the intention of the prince to have them immediately embarked on their arrival and sent to Portugal; but there were no transports or provisions ready, and they were permitted to encamp while they were prepared.

During all these trying events, Dom Pedro acted with an energy, promptness, and decision, which could hardly be expected from his years and inexperience. He had made his election, and he proceeded firmly to execute it; but his ministers, adverse or timid, would not second him; and his situation was rendered still more trying and embarrassing by their desertion. They resigned their situations, and he applied to others to fill up the vacancies. They also, feeble or irresolute in such doubtful events, declined the dangerous situation; till at length he sent to St. Paul's, and the popular magistrate Andrada, for whom he had contracted a personal regard, came to his aid and accepted

the situation of minister of justice and foreign affairs, and others followed his example. A remarkable instance of the state of the public mind occurred on this occasion. It was generally rumoured that the Portuguese troops intended to arrest the ministers on their way to the capital, and it was deemed necessary to double the patrols and station guards along the roads for their personal security; but no attempt was made against them.

The state of Rio at this time, as described to me, was very dismal: all the shops were closed, and all the streets abandoned. The shopkeepers were all enrolled among the military as militia, and were distinguished by no uniform, but paraded before their doors, with cross-belts of raw hides over their ordinary clothes. They are generally persons of low stature, and who, from their sedentary habits of life, become very corpulent and disinclined to move if they can avoid it. On this occasion, however, they were all activity, and showed an alertness so superior to the Portuguese, that the troops acquired distinctive appellations by contrast; the Brazilians were called, I think, Pé da Cabra, foot of the goat, from their activity; and the Portuguese, Pé de Chumbo, foot of lead, from their heavy tread in marching.

These long after continued as sobriquets of the different partisans of all classes, applied indiscriminately on both sides.

The transports were now ready, but the Portuguese troops refused, under various pretexts, to embark. One of the articles of their removal to Praya Grande stipulated that they should retain their arms, and they seemed preparing to use them. Prompt means were taken here also, to frustrate any attempt they could make. A strong cordon of native troops was drawn up in their rear, to cut off their return to the city by land, and two frigates were moored close beside them at sea. Dom Pedro, accompanied by his new ministry, appeared on board one of the frigates, and calling on the general of the Portuguese, he informed him he was allowed till next day to embark; and if at that time he had not proceeded on board, he would commence a fire on him by sea and land. To suit the action to the word, I am told, he held in his hand a lighted match, and declared he would be the man himself who would discharge the first gun. This declaration, and the known character of the prince, resolute to carry it into effect, was decisive; the next day the troops were all embarked and sailing from the harbour.

It was hoped that when the Portuguese soldiers were removed, all cause of agitation would subside, and the display of public feeling convince the cortes, how unwise as well as desperate was the project of attempting to reduce such a country again to the state of a colony. But this was not the case. Among the political schemes of Portugal to secure the entire dependence of Brazil, one was to divide it into several captaincies, each independent of all the rest, and deriving their authority only from the mother-country. They hoped by these means to destroy the bond of unanimity, and erect a number of petty principalities, all jealous of each other, and looking up for countenance and support only to the cortes. The effect of this soon began to operate. Maranhão, Bahia, and other places had been actuated by this spirit; and to keep it alive, a fresh force was sent out from Portugal, under General Madeira, who landed in Bahia, in February 1822, and took military possession of the city.

Meantime plots and conspiracies were every day forming in the ardent and unsettled mind of the people, and wild and impracticable schemes of all kinds were planned in different places. The Minas Geräes had early distinguished itself by its independent and revolu-

tionary opinions, and a faction, headed by the Juiz da Fora, and supported by an officer of caçadores, set up the standard of insurrection at Villa Rica, the capital, and refused to acknowledge the authority of the Prince. On this occasion also Dom Pedro displayed the untiring activity and energy of his character. He ordered troops to march to the disaffected places, but he did not wait for their tardy progress; leaving Andrada to conduct the government in his absence, he set out himself in person for the insurgent capital. The boldness and rapidity of his movements at once astonished and disconcerted them. The militia of the Comarca, who advanced from Villa Rica to oppose his forces, immediately submitted to himself, when they met him on the road alone and without an army. He entered Villa Rica on the 9th of April: the revolutionary parties immediately dissolved and joined the camera and magistrates, in a deputation to receive him. He made them a speech, in which he complimented them on their zeal, and congratulated them, that the fetters of slavery which had bound them, were now burst asunder by themselves; bade them be free and constitutional, and rely on him as he relied on them, and concluded by shouting vivas for the constitution, religion, honest men,

and the mineiros. He inflicted no punishment on the conspirators, except suspension from office; and having secured the attachment of the place, returned with the same rapidity to Rio as he had advanced. In thirty days he traversed near 1000 miles, almost unattended, across serras and campos, through wild and almost impassable roads; established peace, good order and attachment, among the disaffected, without a single act of severity; and on the evening of his arrival at Rio, he proceeded to the opera, and announced that the Minas and its capital had returned to their duty. From that time the city changed its name, and was called "Cidade Imperiale," to commemorate this rapid and extraordinary visit.

The admiration and enthusiasm of the people for his person had now attained their height. The 13th of May was the anniversary of the birth of his father, and of the advancement of his grandmother to the throne of Portugal; and the Brazilians determined to distinguish it by another circumstance. A deputation of the camera waited on him, with a request that he would accept the title of "Constitutional Prince Regent, and perpetual defender of Brazil." He accepted the title, the latter part of which is

still retained, and impressed on his coins.* He was then invited, by a deputation from St. Paul's and the Minas, to call together a general council to deliberate on public affairs—he complied with their request, and they soon after assembled.

The whole of Brazil seemed now impressed with the conviction, that it was no longer possible to continue united with Portugal, and this feeling was brought to a crisis by the Lisbon cortes. The most fierce and insulting language was used towards Brazil in their sittings, in which the people in the galleries participated. Like all nations under similar circumstances, their pride was wounded, and their prejudices roused, that their colonists should dare to think or act otherwise than they chose to dictate; and they had no notion of communicating to them that liberty of thinking and speaking, which they were so clamorous in demanding for themselves. Whenever the Brazilian deputies attempted to remonstrate or advocate the cause of their country, they were put down by acclamation, and decrees were past, peremptorily ordering the Prince to Europe in four months, and

* Perp. Bras. Def.

denouncing all military commanders who obeyed his orders, unless by compulsion, as traitors to Portugal.

When the news of these proceedings arrived in Brazil, Dom Pedro was at a distance from the capital, at the little town of Piranga; and as soon as he received the despatches, he was struck with their contents, and remained for some time in deep meditation on them. At length, roused as it were from his reverie, and well convinced of the sentiments of all around him, he exclaimed "Independence, or Death!" and the exclamation was repeated with enthusiasm by all who heard it. From this circumstance, I have heard it said that the town of Piranga is considered by the people, as the cradle of Brazilian independence.*

Meantime, fresh troops were daily arriving to reinforce Madeira in Bahia, continual sorties were made by the garrison, as if into an enemy's country, and the Brazilians collected a large force to suppress their excesses. These took post at Caxoeira, and were continually

* A French writer notices the circumstance in the following turgid words: "Ce serment repété par tous ses compagnons, retentit dans l'immensité du désert. Il frappe les vastes flancs des montagnes aurifères; il va plus long encore, il traverse l'Atlantique, reveille les échos du Tage, et fait pâlir sur leurs thrônes, les monarques du vieux monde."

augmented by fresh levies, who shut up Madeira in the town, as the North Americans did the English army at Boston. It is in revolutionary times, when the feelings of men are in a high state of excitement, that their ingenuity is quickened, and resources supplied by extraordinary means and inventions. Salt is an article of the first necessity in Brazil, and the patriot army was greatly distressed for a supply, to preserve their provisions, as well as of ammunition for military operations. In this emergency, an apothecary of the town supplied their wants, by his own ingenuity. He collected sugar coppers, in which he boiled down, and evaporated, the sea water; and he procured all the nitre of the neighbourhood, and applied himself, with success, to the manufacture of gunpowder. All the engenhos, or sugar houses, were searched, and a number of old muskets was found, which were repaired and rendered fit for use; and the Brazilians commenced a regular siege of the Portuguese. They were shortly joined by a reinforcement from Pernambuco, and a squadron arrived from Rio, and landed an abundant supply of muskets, field-pieces, cartridges, and other munitions of war. They now stretched their lines across the whole peninsula, and the Portuguese, who

had also received a large reinforcement of men, were cut off from all supplies, except by sea, for their support.

The Portuguese made several attempts to remove these obstructions and dislodge the besiegers, but they were always repulsed by the natives, who displayed many extraordinary acts of enthusiastic courage, in which even the women were conspicuous. One girl, the daughter of a peasant, rendered herself as famous as Bobelina among the Greeks, or the Maid of Saragossa among the Spaniards. Her name was Maria de Jesus, and she had come to the army as a substitute conscript for her brother or father. She served as a soldier with singular intrepidity, and for a long time without the smallest suspicion of her sex.

While things remained in this state at Bahia, Dom Pedro was invited by the council he had assembled to call together a general legislative and constituent assembly of deputies from every part of the country, to deliberate on the urgent necessities of Brazil, and provide for them. This measure was immediately adopted, and from that moment the countries were virtually separated, and Brazil an independent nation.

Prepared now to profit by the enthusiasm his declaration of independence had excited, and

having been in fact acknowledged emperor of an independent kingdom by the provinces, he had soon this tacit assent confirmed by an imposing ceremony. The 12th of October was the anniversary of his birth, and he determined to make that day also, in 1822, the festival of his election. The citizens and soldiers assembled in the vast square of the Campo de Sta. Anna, on the morning of that day, to the number, it is supposed, of 100,000 persons, and proclaimed him with shouts, "The Constitutional Emperor, with the unanimous acclamation of the people." The kingdom changed its style and title, and all connexion with Portugal was rent in sunder, and from that day abjured by the people. Similar spontaneous acclamations took place at St. Paul's, Minas Geräes, St. Catharine's, and Rio Grande, and other provinces. To commemorate the circumstance, the great square of Sta. Anna changed its name to that of the Campo d'Acclamacão, and has so been called ever since.

From the period when Dom John proceeded to Lisbon, his son had kept up a constant correspondence with him on the events passing in the country. These letters were submitted by his father to the cortes, who ordered a certain number of copies of them to be printed for the

use of the members. I saw these letters at Rio; and some of them exhibit an extraordinary tissue of duplicity; and if one brother in Portugal has been stigmatized by his opponents as a violater of his solemn pledges, the other in Brazil has not escaped a similar censure. In one of these letters he particularly laments the growing embarrassments and difficulties of his situation, and earnestly solicits his recall.

"I supplicated your Majesty," said he, "by all that is sacred in the world, to dispense with the painful functions you have assigned me, which will end in killing me. Frightful pictures surround me continually. I have them always before me. I conjure your Majesty to permit me as soon as possible to go and kiss your royal hand, and to sit on the steps of your throne. I seek only to procure a happy tranquillity."* He was in consequence recalled; a vessel was sent to convey him, and he would not go.

Again he writes — "They wish, and they say they wish, to proclaim me emperor. I protest to your Majesty I will *never be perjured*; that I never will be false to you; and that if they ever commit that folly, it shall not be till after

* Letter III. Sept. 21, 1821.

they have *cut me to pieces*—me and all the Portuguese; a solemn oath which I here *have written with my blood,* in the following words: I swear to be always faithful to your Majesty, to the Portuguese nation and constitution."* In conformity with this solemn declaration written in his blood, he threatens to fire on his faithful Portuguese, if they do not instantly return home; and shortly after he is the first to propose a separate legislation for Brazil, to have the country proclaimed independent, and himself acknowledged its sovereign.

It was now resolved to prosecute the war against Bahia with the utmost vigour, for they considered that their independence was precarious, as long as a Portuguese soldier remained in the country. To this end a naval armament was indispensable, as the Portuguese, though confined on the land side, were masters of th sea, and had all the resources which could be supplied in that way open to them.

* The following is the original of this strong document:—"Querião me, e dizem que me querem, acclamar Imperador; protesto a vossa Magest. que nunca serei perjuro, que nunca lhe serei falso, e que elles farão esa loucura, mas sérá depois de eu, e todos os Portugueses, estarem feitos em postas. *He o que juro a voss. Magest. escrevendo nesta com a mea sangue estas seguintes palavras, juro sempre ser fiel a voss. Magest. a Nacão e a constituicão Portuguesa.*"—Letter IV. Oct. 4, 1821.

Every exertion therefore was made to refit the ships lying in dock, left behind by Dom John. The arsenal was daily visited by the emperor, liberal voluntary subscriptions were made to complete them, and agents were sent out to search for and engage officers and men, either on the spot, or such as could be induced to enter the service from other countries, to man and command them. Some arrived from North America, some from Buenos Ayres; but the man on whom the Brazilians placed most reliance was Lord Cochrane, who, having achieved the independence of a considerable part of Spanish America, was now looked up to as the person most capable of rendering the same service to Brazil also. He was then in Chili; and an invitation being sent to him, he arrived at Rio on 13th March, 1803, to take the command of the new Brazilian fleet. It consisted of one ship of eighty guns, formerly the Dom João VI. but now named the Pedro Primeiro, in honour of the emperor, with ten others of lesser force, and four armed merchantmen, making in all fifteen ships, commanded by captains of different nations, and manned by motley crews, the greater number of whom were any thing but sailors. On the 1st of April the squadron weighed and sailed from Rio.

The Portuguese garrison had been considerably reinforced, and now consisted of fourteen or fifteen effective battalions in the town, and a fleet in the harbour, far superior to that which Lord Cochrane brought with him. His entire force was seven ships, mounting 250 guns; while that of the Portuguese was thirteen, carrying 398 guns. As soon as it was known that he had arrived, the whole Portuguese fleet hauled out, and spread themselves along the shores of the Bay; and Lord Cochrane, with his accustomed decision, boldly determined to attack them, though some of his squadron had not yet arrived. He instantly separated them, but he effected nothing; his ships sailed, and were worked so badly, that he could not avail himself of their assistance. A considerable part of the crews were Portuguese, and could not be relied on; and it is said, that two marines of that nation stood in the magazine passage of the admiral's ship, with drawn swords in their hands, and so endeavoured to prevent the powder from being served during the engagement. It was determined to renew the attack next day, but the enemy had withdrawn, and taken refuge under their own guns on shore; and here they suffered themselves to be blockaded by a squadron far inferior to themselves,

and so were penned in, both by land and sea, where they soon became a prey to famine and disorganization.

The blockade was now so vigorously maintained, that they were compelled to dismiss all the useless mouths from the town, and three days were allowed the inhabitants to prepare for their departure. They were then, to the number of 16,000 persons, driven from the place towards the enemy's lines, like the citizens of Derry, during the memorable siege of that city. It was in the middle of the rainy season, and the unfortunate fugitives, particularly delicate females, suffered the extremity of misery, from their unprovided state in the most inclement weather.

Lord Cochrane now put in practice one of those acts of intrepidity and enterprise, which distinguish him. He determined to burn and destroy the Portuguese fleet as they lay in the harbour. The commander of the English squadron then in the bay, knowing well the temper and determination of his lordship, advised the Portuguese admiral to be on his guard; and he himself, as a precautionary measure against the accident of fire-ships, drew off several miles from his squadron. The admiral disregarded the caution; and one night

at ten o'clock, while he was on shore dining with the general, he was alarmed by a shot from the bay, and, on inquiry, found that his fleet was actually attacked where they lay. Lord Cochrane, availing himself of the darkness, hove his ship into the midst of the enemy, and alongside of the admiral. When he was preparing to board, the breeze that brought him suddenly failed, and he found himself alone in the midst of the hostile fleet, and under the guns of their batteries. In this emergency he had no alternative, but to escape if he could. He was aware that the concussion of the air from the discharge of a single gun, might lull the slight breeze, which yet remained, into a dead calm; so he hastily availed himself of what had not died away, and stood again out of the harbour.

The Brazilians meantime, impatient of delay, were determined to make an attack on the town on their side. To this end they formed on the skirts of the wood, where they were encamped, and advanced to the assault in three columns, with great appearance of resolution. They were, however, received with a tremendous shower of grape; and the garrison having made a sortie, rushed on them with fixed bayonets before they could recover from their confusion.

They were repulsed with great loss; but the general was unable to derive any advantage from it. Meantime, Lord Cochrane was preparing for a second attack, but an accident happened to his ship, which was well nigh proving fatal to himself and all on board. A cask of spirits took fire, probably applied by some of the disaffected on board, and communicated to the timbers of the ship. In the alarm, half of the crew leaped overboard, and a great many were drowned before they could be picked up again; but the fire was happily extinguished before it communicated to the powder magazine.

It is supposed that apprehension of the total destruction of his fleet, by some bold and desperate effort of Lord Cochrane, as well as the want of provision, determined Madeira at length to abandon a place he found no longer tenable. All his stores, and valuables in plate and money, were embarked in thirty-two sail of transports; and with these, and thirteen ships-of-war, with several others, to the number of seventy in all, he sailed out of the harbour of Bahia on the 3d of July, 1823; and immediately the Brazilians entered the city on the land side, and took quiet possession of it, without committing a single excess.

The Portuguese were pursued by Lord Cochrane, and part of his squadron, with the most unrelenting rigour across the Equator; when having taken more than one half of their transports, and so dispersed the rest, that only thirteen sail of them continued together, he returned to Brazil, to dispossess the few foreign troops that remained in Maranhão and Para. He arrived at the former place, July 26, 1823; a provisional government was established in the name of the emperor, and the Portuguese troops, to the number of about 300 men, were embarked. Similar proceedings took place at Para, and the last of the Portuguese left the shore of Brazil for ever.

All these events occurred with comparatively little loss of life, or extreme suffering to any party, except at Para. Here the adherents of the emperor, thinking they were entitled to the plunder of the town, as a reward for their services, rose in a state of insurrection for the purpose. They were, however, suppressed: some were shot, and others confined on board a prison-ship; of these latter more than 250 were found dead next morning in the hold, with frightful marks of destruction. In their rage and despair some had strangled themselves, some their neighbours, but the greater number had died by suffocation: four only survived.

While these events were passing in the north, every thing at Rio was maturing to the final and permanent establishment of the trans-atlantic empire. The brothers, Andrada, who had taken such a distinguished part in affairs, and were so high in the confidence of the emperor, had, from some misunderstanding, resigned the offices they held, and the people regarded it as a public calamity. One of them lived at Cateté, near the Gloria, and the emperor was determined to go in person, and request him to resume his ministry, when a curious scene occurred. The people, apprised of his purpose to visit him, anticipated his intention, and proceeded there before him. When he approached the house, he saw a large concourse of persons coming towards him, shouting vivas, and conducting his minister to meet him. He sprung from his carriage, hung upon his neck, and persuaded him again to resume his situation; and this was publicly announced the same night at the theatre. These scenes, whether felt or feigned, had a powerful effect on the multitude.

The 1st of December was the day appointed for his coronation. Dom Pedro, like Napoleon, had attached a certain prestige to particular days; and as his acclamation was made on that of his birth

as a political new birth, so this of his coronation was the anniversary of the deliverance of Portugal from the Spanish yoke, as it was intended to commemorate that of Brazil from the yoke of Portugal. It was in the midst of the wet season of the country, and it rained in torrents the whole day; but this did not extinguish the ardour of the spectators, who assembled in the same multitudes as on former similar occasions; and triumphal arches, and other displays, were erected in all parts of the city. The ceremony was performed in the chapel attached to the palace, which was used as a cathedral, and the evening concluded, as usual, with a grand opera, which exhibited a most splendid scene. The ladies glittering with the diamonds of the country; the military in gorgeous uniforms, covered with stars of different orders; and the superb display of the emperor's box, filled with his suite,—all conspired to add to the impressive effect; while crowns and wreaths of laurel were showered down from all parts of the theatre, and sundry ladies of rank and respectability spontaneously came forward on the stage, like so many Corinnés, and sung national hymns and patriotic airs, in which they were joined by the whole house.

A new academy was founded shortly after, and this coronation was taken as a subject to

exercise the pencil of the students. A large and striking picture was executed, representing the ceremony, where all the figures were portraits, and nearly as large as life, and it was intended that this should be preserved as the first specimen of the arts executed in the country. I saw it afterwards in the hall of the academy, a sad specimen of the mutability of popular feeling; some disaffected person had cut the cords by which it was suspended; it fell to the ground, and was burst into fragments by its own weight, and it remained there, an object of scoff and ridicule to the fickle citizens.

At this time the people of Brazil were greatly alarmed and afflicted at an accident that threatened the life of their popular emperor. While riding one day with his usual impetuosity, his naked sword was forced from his hand against his leg, so as nearly to lame him; and while yet labouring under the effects of this accident, he fell from his horse with violence, and broke two of his ribs. These injuries confined him to his bed, and obliged him to absent himself for some time from public affairs. In the mean time, disputes arose among his ministers, and his friends and counsellors, the Andradas, retired again from office.

Preparations had been for some time making

to regulate the manner of electing deputies to form the first constituent and legislative assembly of Brazil, and sundry alvarás and ordinances had been issued for the purpose. In April, 1823, a number of the members had arrived in the capital, and on the 17th of the same month they assembled, to the amount of fifty-two, in the hall appointed for the purpose, and elected Dom Jose Cãetano, the bishop and grand chaplain, their first president. After some preliminary regulations, they all took an oath to the purport that "they would faithfully execute the trust reposed in them in framing a political constitution for Brazil, and making indispensable reforms, and that they would maintain the Catholic religion and the dynasty of Dom Pedro, their first emperor, and his issue." When these forms were gone through, and the assembly regularly constituted, they invited the emperor to be present at their first session, and he appointed the 3d of May for the purpose. This particular day was fixed on because it was connected with another important event in the annals of the country: it was the day on which Cabral discovered it, and this new era in politics was like a second discovery of its means of prosperity, and the second great epocha in its history.

At an early hour the city was on the alert, and the streets were strewed with flowers and odoriferous herbs, the whole of the way through which he intended to pass. This practice is very common with the Brazilians, and on all occasions of any procession I have seen it done more or less. A throne was prepared in the assembly for the emperor, and a box for the empress and her family on his right hand. The president's chair was on the first step of the throne, and before him a table, on which lay the gospels. The emperor was met by a deputation of the members, who conducted him to his throne, where he laid aside his crown and sceptre, and addressed the assembly in a long and eloquent speech, enumerating all the political events which had taken place in the country, and the measures adopted to ameliorate and improve its condition, and pointed out the line they were to pursue in framing a new constitution, in which they should well define the limits of the three powers composing the state, and oppose insuperable barriers to despotism, whether royal, aristocratic, or democratic. The emperor was loudly cheered by the assembly and the spectators in the gallery, and conducted with enthusiastic plaudits back to his palace.

The assembly, thus constituted under such favourable auspices, were naturally looked up to as those who had the future happiness and prosperity of Brazil in their hands, and their discussions and decisions seemed at first to realize all that had been expected from them. They decided on the great questions of personal and religious freedom, trial by jury, liberty of the press, and inviolability of property, and defined and established wise and judicious limits for them all. The abolition of religious distinction was also a fair feature in their proceedings. It was certainly a proud triumph in this Catholic land, hitherto shut out from all intercourse with other nations, and supposed to entertain the most intolerant prejudices against heretics that ignorance and bigotry could engender, that all strangers naturalized in the country should be now entitled to equal protection from the laws, whatever was their religion, and all Christians be eligible to all offices and employments.*

Another object which engaged their attention was, the state of slavery, which it would have taken into its consideration. This is perhaps the subject of all others in which the interests

* By the constitution subsequently formed, those who are not of the religion of the state may vote at elections, but cannot be returned as deputies.

and prejudices of all classes are most deeply involved; and the immense property vested in slaves, and their almost exclusive employment in every branch of product or traffic, had so interwoven the system with every thing in the country, that it seemed as if touching this foundation would pull down the whole fabric of Brazilian industry and prosperity. Notwithstanding this, the feelings of natural right had become now so generally recognized, that it was one of the subjects which would have engaged the greatest share of the attention of the deputies, had they been suffered to discuss it.

The Andradas, though no longer ministers, had seats in this assembly, and were among its most influential members. They were men of ardent and daring minds; and while investigating the state of the country, and pointing out abuses which required reform, many questions arose, particularly on the subject of the veto, which caused much heat and excitement, and called forth violent republican opinions. The emperor himself adverted to this in his proclamation of the 8th of August:—"Some of the municipalities," said he, "have given instructions to their deputies, in which democracy predominates; but democracy in Brazil, in this vast empire, is an absurdity. The times we live

in abound in sad monitions: let us look to the fate of others, as beacons to warn ourselves where to avoid the danger."

The people without were equally violent; and every apothecary's and barber's shop, the usual places for discussing political questions in Rio, became a debating society. A letter appeared in a newspaper called the Sentinella, in which were very severe strictures on the officers of the horse artillery. Two of them attacked a young man of the name of Pamplona, an apothecary, whom they supposed was the author, and violently assaulted him in his own shop. This incident was magnified as a military outrage on the liberty of the subject, and the chamber took it up. The people of the galleries were permitted to take their seats on the benches below, and the deputies were so heated with the subject, that the most violent speeches were made, and the most extreme measures talked of; they first proposed a resolution, that the European military should move six leagues from Rio.

The emperor was at S. Christovão when he heard of it, and immediately, without convening a council, or consulting any person, took with him the third regiment of infantry, and some cavalry quartered near the palace, and proceeded at

once to the hall. He surrounded the building with the military, and then sent General Moraës into the house, to dissolve the assembly. I have heard from those who were present, that the scene was singularly awful. When the thing was rumoured in the house, the debate was suspended, and a dead silence for a moment prevailed. This was broken by the tramp of an armed man ascending the stairs, with his gingling accoutrements: he stood at the door of the hall, and then presented a paper, ordering the deputies to disperse. The president did not lose for a moment his self-possession. He rose with dignity, and denounced any person who would violate the sanctity of the national representation, as a traitor to his country, and commanded the military man to retire from the hallowed precincts of the legislative assembly. The general replied by pointing to the square below; and when the president looked out, he saw it filled with armed men, and cannon planted against the building; "To you, gentlemen," said he, with the greatest coolness, "I must yield, and not to any other argument." The atrocious massacre of the Alfandega was yet recent in the memory of them all, and they justly apprehended the repetition of a similar scene. The deputies, therefore, yielding to

force, but making no opposition, quitted the hall. As the late minister, Andrada, with his brothers, and three or four more, descended the stairs, they were arrested, put on board a vessel ready in the harbour, which immediately sailed, and they were landed on the coast of France.

Of all the men who distinguished themselves in the early events of the Brazilian revolution, none have attracted so much public notice as the brothers Andrada; and I collected the following particulars of them, from persons who were well acquainted with them. The family is one of the most respectable in Brazil. It appears, by an inscription in the aqueduct of the Carioca, that it was executed under the direction of one of the family of Andrada, so that the name is endeared to the country by the most magnificent monument of public utility which it possesses.

The present family resides at St. Paul's, and consists of three persons—Jozé Bonafacio, Martim Francisco, and Carlos Rebeiro. The first had been sent from Brazil to Portugal, when young, to be educated at the university of Coimbra, where he was, I believe, a professor, and was lying dangerously ill when the king departed from Lisbon, and so could not

accompany him. When the French entered Portugal, he headed the students of the college, in a rising which took place to oppose them; and afterwards served in the army, where he obtained the rank of colonel. He then travelled through Europe, and made the acquaintance of some of the most eminent literary characters of the day. In Sweden, he devoted himself to the study of mineralogy, and collected a valuable assortment of rare specimens, to qualify him for the pursuit; and he returned to his native country, with a mind stored with the lights and information which he had every where procured. But the subject to which he directed his attention in particular was agriculture, which he deemed of most importance to the rich, but uncultivated soil of Brazil; and he was engaged in the pursuit on his paternal patrimony, when called into public life by his fellow-citizens.

His last effort in the constituent assembly was on the subject of slavery; he drew up an address, in which he makes an energetic appeal to them to abolish gradually a state in which, contrary to the laws of God and man, a person is made a thing, and property claimed in that in which another can have no property; and he clearly proves, that the cultivating the soil by slaves is the bane of the prosperity of Brazil.

Before he could pronounce this address, the assembly was dissolved, and he was arrested and exiled. It was not, however, lost; for the manuscript was left with a friend in Brazil, who published it when he was gone. His lady's name was O'Leary, the daughter of Irish parents, having much of the cordiality of manner which is generally supposed to distinguish people of her country: when retired from public life, he enjoyed great happiness in her society, and in that of their children, to whom he is fondly attached; among those and his books, of which he has a large collection, in all languages, he receives with great kindness all strangers who visit them. He is, therefore, not only an enlightened, but a good moral man, and capable of improving his countrymen, not more by his knowledge, than by his example.

Martim Francisco is a man held in equal estimation with his brother for intelligence and moral worth. As minister at the head of the treasury, it is admitted by all that he conducted himself with the most unimpeachable integrity, and retired from that situation with the respect and regret of the public. But people speak of Carlos Ribeiro in a different manner.

As a public man, he was distinguished by his violence. In 1817, he was supposed to be a

principal promoter of the disturbances of Pernambuco, and was placed by the governor on an ass, with his face to the tail, and so led through the town. When afterwards charged with his turbulence, he boldly said, in the presence of the monarch, and in the hearing of a friend who told me the story, that he did not, nor would not, ever repent of this revolutionary attempt.

The brothers established at Rio a most violent paper, called the *Tamoyo*, adopting this name from a tribe of Indians who had inhabited the country round Rio, and were noted for their hostility to the Portuguese. It was in this the emperor was warned to remember, and dread the fate of other monarchs; that Pedro I. of Brazil should never forget Charles I. of England. When it was determined to dissolve the constituent assembly, one of them declared, like Mirabeau, that nothing but force should separate them, and they were the last who retired. After remaining in France for five years in exile, they determined to return to their own country, and applied for passports for that purpose. The Brazilian chargé d'affaires, it is said, opposed their wishes; but they applied to M. Feronays in person, and he immediately procured for them a safe and speedy passage through the territories of France. Martim

Francisco and Ribeiro embarked on board the Vaillant, at Bordeaux, and arrived in Brazil in June, 1828. On landing, they were detained in custody in the fortress of the Ilha das Cobras, and from hence they sent a petition to the chamber of deputies, then sitting, that they should be tried, and judged publicly; one of them insisting on it as a right, that, as a doctor of laws, he should be allowed to defend himself. "If the Chambers," said he in his petition, "suffer that an attack be made on the rights of the constitution, by destroying the inviolability of its members, for their sentiments delivered in debate, they will vote their own condemnation in surrendering their best rights and privileges." He forgot that this inviolability was only subsequently guaranteed by the constitution, but was not in existence at the time of the constituent assembly. After a protracted process, during which these restless men had various encounters with the different newspapers, particularly with the Astro de Minas, they were discharged of all offence, and on the 13th of September, 1828, had an audience of reconciliation with the emperor. After this they withdrew to St. Paul's, where they proposed to live a retired life, devoted to agriculture; but it was supposed that one of

them, at least, would be returned a deputy for the province at the next election.

When the emperor dissolved the constituent assembly, he immediately declared he would call another, and submit to it a form of government more liberal than the one intended to be framed. He redeemed his pledge, and in December following he himself drew up a constitution to be submitted to a general national assembly. Before the assembly met, it was officially published, and the citizens of all the towns were called on to examine and express their opinion of it. Books were opened in every place, and all persons were invited to inscribe their assent or disapprobation. The books filled with these signatures were sent to Rio, and when examined it was found that the assent was nearly unanimous. This was considered a sufficient indication of public opinion, and the constitution was promulgated as that of the future government of the country, without undergoing the discussion of any assembly.

It was on the occasion of taking the oath to this constitution that a suspicious event occurred, which gave rise to various conjectures not yet satisfied. It was to be celebrated, as usual, at the theatre, on the 25th of March, 1824; but just as the emperor had left his

palace for that purpose, a fire burst out in the theatre, and by the time he arrived it was all in a flame. Fires are of rare occurrence in Brazil, particularly at Rio. The walls are generally of granite, and the floors of jacaranda or other hard wood, which resists fire like stone. When this large edifice therefore was burnt down so unexpectedly, and on such a remarkable day, it was generally attributed to design, and as a means of retarding or preventing the emperor's ratification of the constitution by his oath. The theatre was reduced to ashes; but the oath was taken the next day in the following words:— "I swear to maintain the Catholic Apostolic and Roman religion, and the integrity and indivisibility of the empire; to observe and cause to be observed as the political constitution of the Brazilian nation, the present project of the constitution which is here presented, and which the same nation accepted and requested should be now sworn to, as the constitution of the empire. I swear to observe, and to cause others to observe, all the laws of the empire, and to watch over the general good of Brazil, as far as in me lies."

On the 6th of May, 1825, the first legislative assembly met under the constitutional act. It consisted of 102 deputies from the

different provinces, elected for three years, and half that number of senators elected for life. They had little to deliberate on, as all the articles had been already adopted. The only important act, was the unanimous one of both chambers, recognizing the eldest son of the emperor as successor to the throne. He had been born in October, 1825, and the constitution required that this should be done on the first session after the birth of an heir apparent. The assemblies were prorogued on the 6th of September.

One thing was now only wanting to give stability to the new empire, and that was to have all claims on it by any other nation renounced, and its separate and independent existence acknowledged by other powers, particularly its former masters the Portuguese. This last great act was effected in August, 1825. The emperor concluded a treaty with his father, by which the entire independence of Brazil on Portugal was acknowledged, Dom John recognised as its emperor, with succession to Dom Pedro, and a sum of two millions sterling paid by Brazil, as a remuneration for this acknowledgment.

This circumstance seems more than any other to have established the tranquillity of the country,

and consolidated the existing order of things. Pernambuco and Ceára were the last of the provinces where any indisposition remained, but these had withdrawn their opposition and given in their adhesion. The country therefore seemed in a state of profound peace; and its vast resources and growing prosperity were so appreciated in Europe, that its funds became a favourite security for investing capital, and many speculators placed their money there, not only in preference to all the other more unsettled states in South America, but even to their own; and this, as well because they were more stable, as because they could afford to pay a higher interest.

It was resolved at this time to assemble a congress at Panama, to be composed of representatives from the several new states of South America, to mediate between them, and regulate the different interests that would arise. The specific objects, to which this amphyctionic council of the new world was to direct its attention, were these—to advise in great conflicts, to interpret treaties with fidelity, to mediate in domestic disputes, and to be an agent in the formation of new rights with foreign states. Had this magnificent idea been carried into effectual operation, and a due influence been

allowed to the assembly, composed of deputies from all the states, it would have been as much more important than that of the Greeks, as the great southern peninsula of the new world is larger than Peloponnesus, or the isthmus of Panama than the isthmus of Corinth.

But the infant states were not yet mature enough for such an assembly. Only four acceded to its principle and sent deputies; Mexico, Peru, Colombia, and Guatimala. The Argentine republic regarded it with suspicion and dislike, and in these sentiments it was followed by Chili. Brazil seemed to accede to the invitation, and resolved to send deputies; but it was generally understood that the object was to watch and counteract their proceedings, rather than cordially to promote their object. The assembly met and separated without effect; the embarrassments and difficulties of each particular state, rather required the watchful care of all its statesmen at home, than dividing it by distant objects abroad; and the situation chosen was so unhealthy, that many persons in attendance fell victims to the climate, and the grand project was altogether abortive.

The plan itself, though so magnificent in idea, has been deemed altogether visionary in practice; and so perhaps it is; but certainly,

were it possible to bring it into effectual operation, those miserable dissensions which have disturbed the new states, and threatened their very existence, would have been amicably adjusted; and among the rest the petty but ruinous warfare between Brazil and Buenos Ayres, an event which, for its folly, is hardly to be paralleled in the annals of ambition.

The vast region of Brazil, extending from the equator to thirty degrees of south latitude, and from the Atlantic to the Andes,—abounding in lands of the most exuberant fertility, but nearly destitute of inhabitants, and whose greatest want is people to occupy them,—was not deemed of sufficient extent for its scanty population, though already as large as all Europe. It was therefore determined to make, or rather to keep, an accession of territory, to which the Brazilians had originally no right, and to engage in a ruinous and expensive war with their neighbours, to effect their object. There lies on the shore, at the mouth of the river of Plate, a strip of land, called for that reason the Banda Oriental, or the eastern bank. The territory on both sides of this river, it appears, was formerly included in the Spanish viceroyalty of Buenos Ayres, of which the town of Monte Video, on a promontory at the entrance of the great estuary,

was the capital; there were, besides, Maldonado, Colonia, and other less important places. When Buenos Ayres, in 1620, was erected into a bishoprick, these towns, with all the rest of the Banda Oriental, were included in the diocese, so that, in civil and ecclesiastical relations, it appertained to the government of Buenos Ayres. Its situation on the shores of the La Plata, rendered it indispensably necessary to the security of the commerce of the city; as, whoever possessed it, commanded the navigation of that great river; and, therefore, when the independence of the states of Buenos Ayres was declared, it made an essential part of the Argentine republic.

When the people, however, first proclaimed their independence, this part was held by General Elio, for the Spaniards, who kept possession of Monte Video, with a large and efficient force. He was opposed, however, by the celebrated guacho partisan Artigas, and defeated with such loss, at the battle of Los Piedras, that the conqueror, joined by Rondeau, laid siege to Monte Video.

It was now, for the first time, that the Portuguese thought of interfering with this portion of Spanish territory. Elio, finding himself hard pressed, immediately applied to the Portuguese

government of Rio, who at once seized on the project of annexing the whole of this Spanish territory to their already enormous and unpeopled possessions, and extending their extravagant limits from the Amazons to the La Plata. An army of 4000 men was sent to support Elio, but he accepted proposals of peace, and it was agreed that both parties should withdraw, and leave the people of the Banda Oriental to themselves.

The war, however, was renewed, when Vigodet, the new governor, received reinforcements from Spain; and Artigas again laid siege to it, and compelled the Spaniards to surrender. The territory was once more evacuated, and left to itself; when the Portuguese immediately determined to march in and seize it. The reason assigned at the time was, that the revolutionists of Buenos Ayres, not confining their principles to their own territory, had sent emissaries into the contiguous Portuguese provinces of Rio Grande, and the missions, to excite revolt and entice the Indians. A force, therefore, of 5000 men was despatched into the country, and they were joined by the continental troops and Paulistas, making an army of 10,000 men. Artigas and his irregular guachos were not able to resist them; and the Portuguese entered Monte

Video on the 20th of January, 1817, and sung *Te Deum* for their conquest. Gonçales dos Sanctos, in his Annals, describes the wonderful benefits the people of Monte Video derived from them; but adds, with great simplicity, "some said it was only a pretext to get possession of the country for ourselves, for the cursed insurgents have many patrons, *Deos os confunda!*"

The inhabitants of the province, however, were known to be exceedingly averse to the domination of Brazil. These republican principles, which the Spaniards of South America had universally adopted, had rendered them hostile to any other form of government; and the conduct of the Portuguese of Monte Video tended not a little to confirm them. When the question of the constitution was under discussion, a few addresses had been got up in different places, calling on the emperor to cause himself to be made absolute; but that from Monte Video exceeded all others in absurdity and servility. He had sent his picture to the Cabildo, or common-council of the town. "When it appeared," said they, "a mixed sensation of trembling and delight seized us, as if we were in the presence of the Lord;" and they humbly advise him to govern like an emperor,

and "at once to assume absolute power." These opinions were exceedingly repugnant to the feelings and principles of the rest of the inhabitants, and they fully accorded with the sentiments of the manifesto of Buenos Ayres, which told them, that "a king born on the other side of the seas insulted their repose, and threatened the honour of their children."

General Le Cor, with 2000 troops, and supported by a small naval squadron, then held possession of Monte Video and the Banda territory, as a dependency on Brazil; but a partisan, named Fructuoso Rivera, raised the standard of revolt, and was soon joined by a number of adherents. He had been originally an officer serving under Artigas, but had afterwards passed over to the service of the Portuguese. Availing himself, however, of the growing indisposition of the inhabitants to the Brazilian government, he collected a force sufficiently strong to lay siege to Monte Video, and a detachment of 300 men, under Antonio Lavalleja, set out from Buenos Ayres to join him. In a short time they overran the whole of the province, with the exception of the towns in which the Portuguese garrisons were shut up, and the people of the country established a provisional government: they declared the act which incorporated them with

Brazil now null and void, and that their universal desire was to be united with their countrymen of Buenos Ayres. This was gladly received at Buenos Ayres; and the congress decreed also, that the act which joined them to Brazil was dissolved, and that measures should be taken to have the country evacuated; but that they did not wish to go to war, if the restitution of their province could be amicably effected. The province was first admitted as a member of the Argentine republic, and then the government of Buenos Ayres prepared to support it. Meantime the Brazilians sent reinforcements to maintain their conquest; and a petty warfare ensued, in which the independents had uniformly the advantage, but the resources of both infant countries were unprofitably wasted.

Skirmishes in deserts on the distant frontiers would not be worth the detail; but a feature of the war involved considerably the interests of other powers. One of the measures of the Brazilian government was to blockade the mouth of Rio de la Plata; and in the beginning of the year 1826, Admiral Lobo, who commanded a small squadron there, declared that this measure was rigorously adopted, but allowed all foreign vessels fourteen days to load and leave the river. Immediately followed a manifesto,

or declaration of war, by the executive government of Buenos Ayres, and a decree granting reprisals and letters of mark against the commerce of Brazil. If any thing could add to the folly of this warfare, it was the absurdity of the measures adopted for carrying it on; the declaration of the blockade embraced a coast of twenty degrees of latitude, and the whole maritime force available to carry it on, amounted to a corvette, two armed brigs, and some gunboats, which would not suffice to watch Buenos Ayres alone. So little was it efficient, that nine foreign vessels in one month entered the port in view of the squadron, which could give them no effectual resistance.

This entire inefficiency invalidated the measure, so that no foreign state was bound to regard it, and the Americans in particular remonstrated against it as wholly inadmissible on the part of the United States, and a violation of the fundamental principle of a blockade. Still the effects were highly injurious. While this contemptible force was cruising in the river, though it could not shut up the port, it produced a total stagnation of business in the capital; commerce with foreign nations was entirely suspended, and great commercial distress ensued.

Small as the Brazilian squadron was, that of

Buenos Ayres was still smaller; and to augment it, the government purchased from Chili their fleet, such as it was, which they themselves had now no occasion for; and Admiral Brown, who commanded the ships of the republic, went overland to take charge of it round Cape Horn. These fleets carried on, in the river of Plate, a war of petty skirmishing similar. to those on land; while the pirates of both states now swarmed abroad, and neutral ships were boarded at sea far beyond the limits even of the assigned blockades. Some of them suffered the most atrocious treatment; and in fact the belligerents became nests of ferocious pirates.

By land, the warfare was carried out of the Banda into the Brazilian provinces of Rio Grande and St. Paul's, invited by the spirit of discontent which already existed there; and this was another feature of imprudence in provoking hostilities with the republicans. The throne of Brazil was scarcely established, and even in time of peace, the democratic feelings of all the states around, presented powerful seductions to its subjects to imitate their example, as they could entertain only one common desire to see monarchy and its principles eradicated from America, as well from sentiment as from a feeling of insecurity and a wish, to give stability

to their own institutions; but the war increased considerably their power of exciting discontent, and afforded them a most plausible pretext to take advantage of it.

It was now that the emperor, dreading the consequences of the growing spirit which was spreading through the southern states, resolved in person to arrest its progress, as he had done on former occasions; and, on the 24th of November, 1826, he embarked for the Isle of St. Catherine, Rio Grande, from whence he landed on the continent and proceeded to the frontiers. The circumstance connected with the departure was the cause of a domestic calamity, which has been deeply felt and deplored all over Brazil. It is far from my desire to communicate to you the private scandal which circulates at Rio as profusely as in Europe; but I wish to give you a faithful detail of events which involve the morals and happiness of a people, without respect to persons; for public opinion is a tribunal before which every one must appear, and the higher his rank in society the more he is amenable to its decisions.

On visiting the province of St. Paul's on a former occasion, he had met with a lady who had attracted his attention in no ordinary degree; by the connivance, it is said, of her own

brother, an interview was arranged, and from that time he became attached to her to a passionate excess. He created her Marchioness of Santos, — built a palace for her close by that at S. Christovão, — acknowledged her child as his own, by the title of Duchess of Goyaz, — and so far forgot what was due to the private feelings of her he was bound to cherish and respect, that he had this person appointed one of the ladies in waiting to his wife. These are matters of public notoriety, of which the evidence exists in the facts themselves. They were borne with a meek and uncomplaining submission by the empress; but on the night of his embarcation for St. Catherine's, a circumstance occurred which roused even her gentle spirit. She had acquiesced, from a sense of duty, in such arrangements as her husband was pleased to make; but she would not sacrifice the respect she owed herself, by visiting her unworthy attendant, nor seem to countenance vice by such a public mark of apparent approbation; a painful discussion took place, and immediately after his departure, the empress was taken alarmingly ill.

The indications of her illness commenced with great severity, she being then in the first stage of pregnancy. The bulletins of her health,

published at the time, which I have read, contain details of symptoms with an indelicate, indeed I may say, a disgusting accuracy, which I am not disposed to copy or translate. They were principally affections connected with her state, and seriously afflicting her with spasmodic and nervous attacks. The whole science of Brazilian medicine was exhausted, and the enumeration of "epispasticos, friçcoēs, sanguesuxes, banhos, catharticos, antispasmodicos, nauseates," and divers other means which are pompously detailed, afford abundant proof how much she must have suffered, both from doctors and disease. Beside the aid of medicine, every thing was resorted to which the religion of the country prescribed as efficacious on solemn occasions,—processions of the different religious orders, and visitations of images of reputed sanctity. Among these, one is gravely mentioned, which can hardly fail to excite a melancholy smile, even on so sad an occasion. Her particular patroness, and at whose shrine she paid assiduous adoration during her life-time, was Nossa Senhora da Gloria; she, therefore, was particularly interested in her recovery, and "the people," said one account, "could not see without the strongest emotion of piety, her image, which never condescended to issue from its

temple, for the first time, on this occasion, *under a heavy shower of rain,* visiting the princess, who never failed on Sundays to be found at the foot of her altar." Alas, poor lady! even such condescension was as unavailing as the medicines under which she suffered.

On the 2d of December, premature labour came on; she was delivered of a male child a few months old, and experienced some slight remission of the symptoms; but they soon after returned with such violence, that all hope of life was abandoned. It was then that her very amiable disposition displayed itself. After having humbly received the last rites of her church, she called around her all the domestics of her establishment, and while they stood, shedding tears of real sympathy and feeling, beside her bed, she asked them in succession whether she had injured or offended them by word or deed, as she could not leave the world with the impression on her mind that any one remembered aught against her, for which she could make reparation. The whole tenor of her domestic life had been so good and condescending to others, that nothing could be recollected that was not so, and her attendants only answered by irrepressible sobs and tears, which her humility and kindness had excited.

On this occasion, it is said, the person who had been the cause of all her domestic afflictions was proceeding to her apartment; but as she was the last person whom she could wish to see about her, a representation was made on the impropriety of her entering the empress's chamber, and adding by her presence to the sufferings of her imperial mistress.—Yet she persisted, in right of her office as camareira, in making her way, with a total disregard of all feeling and sense of propriety on such a solemn occasion, notwithstanding strong remonstrances made to her; and was hardly at length repulsed by the firmness and good sense of some of the attendants, who were afterwards dismissed for their interference.

On the 11th of December, at ten o'clock in the morning, the empress was relieved from her acute sufferings by death, having to the last sustained her illness with a meek and pious fortitude. She perished in the prime of life, and just before in apparent health, at the early age of twenty-nine years ten months and nineteen days.

Her funeral was conducted with a pomp and splendour hitherto unknown in Brazil. It is not my intention to describe it to you, as it was described to me, with all its gaudy display.

Invest, if you will, the living persons of rank and power with all the ensigns that rank and power can exact, they may be necessary to excite the feeling of awe and respect in the governed, toward those who govern, which obedience to the laws and the good order of the state may require; but to surround the corpse with such distinctions, to wrap the putrid body in costly robes, and to illumine it with glare and splendour, only to make its melancholy decay more conspicuous, seems to me the most miserable mockery of the dead, and the greatest, as it is the weakest, absurdity of the living. There were, however, parts of this solemnity which were no less affecting than they were rational and appropriate to the sad occasion. Of all such ceremony the beijamão, or kissing the hand, forms an essential part. The hand of the deceased is extended, and for the last time those who loved and respected the living, come to take an affectionate leave of all that remained of them. On this occasion, her children approached to pay this solemn duty to their mother. They were led respectively by the chamberlains of the court to the side of the coffin, and there kissed her extended hand. They were all too young to feel any strong impression of what they were doing, except

the eldest, Dona Maria. The young Queen of Portugal, I am told, showed extraordinary sensibility for her age. She sobbed and wept bitterly, and seemed deeply and affectionately impressed with the recollection of her good mother.

The funeral procession was at night, and performed by torch-light, as are those of all the persons of rank in the country. Seven altars were erected at the veranda of the palace, at which seven clergymen officiated, and the streets through which the funeral past were lined with ecclesiastics of the several religious communities. At eleven at night it arrived at the convent of the Ajuda, where the body was received by the sisterhood, and deposited, not in a tomb, but under a canopy, in which state it still remains in the cemetery of the convent, which does not contain the remains of a more pure or excellent woman.

When her death was known, it produced a sudden and spontaneous expression of grief from the nation, no less flattering to the memory of the empress, than creditable to themselves. The Brazilians are a people of strong sensibilities, and prize as highly, as they appreciate justly, the moral qualities of those who are conspicuous among them for rank or station.

The public press is the vehicle through which these feelings are conveyed; it is a novel and fascinating medium of communicating what they think, and if it sometimes displays the bad passions which agitate the mind of the writers, it as often evinces the good and kindly ones. On this occasion it teemed with letters from individuals of both sexes, expressing in strong and affecting language their feelings on this melancholy occasion, of which I send you one of each as a specimen of Brazilian style and sentiment.

The first is from a man:—"I render my humble and due homage to the virtues of the empress. Disinterested, retiring, her character was kindness, her conduct modesty; a dutiful consort, an affectionate mother, an affable princess, a friend to the sciences, generous, just, and full of sensibility. She loved the human race, and did good to all to whom her arm could extend; she never saw distress without a corresponding feeling of affliction and an effort to relieve it. The day on which princes descend to the tomb belongs to history; the people whose destinies they sway, mark, when they cease to exist, the future place which they ought to fill; and severe truth elevates herself on their tombs, and speaks of them as they

really are. Contemporaries are the subjects of sovereigns, but sovereigns themselves are the subjects of posterity. The virtues which adorned her — her wisdom, her moderation, her prudence, her charities, her very sufferings, have endeared her memory to a sincere people. This is not the language of adulation or the tactic of a court. It is that feeling which has called unbidden tears into the eyes of every citizen, and clothed them with spontaneous mourning."

The next is from a woman:—"I never supposed that any motive could compel me to leave the privacy and retirement in which I have lived, and become a correspondent of the public press; but I am a Brazilian woman, a wife, and a mother; and I cannot restrain the impulse which urges me to give utterance to what I feel on this melancholy occasion, though I want words in which to express myself; and when I attempt to write, the only expression of my grief is tears. Still I cannot rest in my apartment, if I do not publicly avow the affliction with which my heart is bursting. Who, endued with the feelings of our common nature, and gifted with a human heart, that does not weep when the best of women, the most dutiful of wives, and the kindest of mothers,

has ceased to exist among us? To woman, wife, mother, I then appeal to join their tears with mine. Would that they could restore her to life! Would that my blood could revive her! Every drop should be shed for that purpose, in testimony how dear in person and valuable in character she was to the Brazilians. But our misfortune is consummated, and all that remains for us is religion and resignation to the will of Providence, who has so disposed it."

The writers of these and similar articles were unknown, and their eulogies were the simple, sincere, and unbought tribute of respect and affection from persons in the middle ranks of life. They all praise her, not for her high station, but for her moral worth and personal qualities; and a poetical effusion of this kind had so little of the deference and adulation offered to royalty on such occasions, that it takes for its motto the classical warning of antiquity to elevated rank:

Pallida mors æquo pulsat pede
Pauperum tabernas
Regumque turres.

When the empress first came to Brazil, she is represented as exceedingly engaging and lovely; her fair skin, clear complexion, blue

eyes, and blond hair, were pleasingly contrasted with the dark locks, brown tint, and sallow visages of the ladies about her. But she soon neglected these advantages; she had not the least personal vanity, and became utterly careless of her appearance, as of a thing altogether of no consideration. She went abroad with large thick boots, loaded with great tarnished spurs, such as are worn by the mineiros. She wrapped herself up in a clumsy great coat, and a man's hat, and in this way sat herself astride on a horse, and rode through all parts of the town. It is true, this mode of riding is always practised in the provinces, and I have never seen a woman there ride otherwise; and she adopted it from a wish to conciliate, in complying with the customs of the people among whom she came to reside; though in Rio, where European habits and the usages of more polished countries have modelled the opinions of the natives, it is considered as coarse and indelicate. When she became a mother, she was as negligent of her person at home as abroad. Her hair, which was long, and without curl, she suffered to hang lank and loose about her face and shoulders; and the defects of her person became every day more conspicuous. She had a large Austrian nether lip, and the thick neck

which is characteristic of the people of Vienna, and gives them the appearance of being *bossu*. When she first appeared as a bride, with all the advantages of youth and dress, these defects were not apparent; but when neglect and indifference, and the duties of a mother succeeded, they were but too conspicuous, and added, it is said, to the estrangement of her husband, who was himself scrupulously neat in his person, as all the Brazilians are, and exacted a similar attention from those about him.

I have heard her much censured for this neglect of herself, as an attention to her person might have secured to her the enduring affections of her husband, as well as his high esteem, which she never lost. But these trifling faults, if faults they could be called, were lost in her many amiable and excellent qualities. Her charity was so boundless, that she never could resist an application. When she went abroad, she carried her pocket full of silver, which she took pleasure in distributing to every one in distress. In this way, her allowance could never keep pace with her generosity. She was a most kind and indulgent mistress to every one around her; an affectionate mother, and a dutiful and submissive wife, under all her provocations. She added to this, a conduct the most correct

and blameless, and an unaffected affability and condescension in her high state, which every body felt and acknowledged. Her love of literature and the fine arts was a distinguished feature in her character, and her talent for letter-writing, both in French and her native language, is highly spoken of, which she exercised with effect for the benefit of Brazil. Her father-in-law, Dom John, equally loved and respected her, and it was her letter to him that effectually reconciled him to the recognition of the independence of the country.

I have been more particular in noticing the death and character of this lady, because she was *the first* empress of the new world. Had she lived, her conduct might have had an important influence on that of her sex here; and the females of Brazil would have been formed on her good model. The exemplary manner in which she performed her domestic duties, the strict and blameless tenour of her life, would no doubt have established a spirit of imitation among those about her; while her love of literature and the arts would have made such pursuits fashionable, and excited a correspondent feeling among those who have hitherto taken no kind of interest in them. She left behind her an elegant and well-assorted library, and also a very beautiful

cabinet of minerals, the choicest specimens of the native mines. When I went to S. Christovão, I expressed a strong wish to the Marquess d'Aracaty, to be allowed to see them, as remains of the person whose memory I had been taught so highly to respect; but I was informed they were not in order, and it is probable they will continue so.

The empress left behind her five children:

Dona Maria da Gloria, Queen of Portugal, . . born April 4, 1819.
Dona Januaria, ... born March 11, 1821.
Dona Paula Mariana, ... born Feb. 17, 1823.
Dona Francisca Carolina, ... born August 2, 1824.
Dom Pedro d'Alcantara, Imperial Prince of Brazil, and heir apparent to the throne, . . born Dec. 2, 1825.

She had another child, a boy, Dom João Carlos, but he fell a victim to the auxiliary Portuguese. When they were breaking the windows, and outraging the inhabitants in 1822, his father thought it necessary to send off his wife and family from Rio, to Santa Cruz, a royal residence, about seventeen leagues distant. They set out suddenly, in a moment of great alarm, without any convenience, and were exposed to a wet and cold night, after a very hot day; and the death of the child was the consequence, who caught a fever and died. This circumstance Dom Pedro pathetically

laments, in his correspondence with his father; and, in accusing the Portuguese at that time of causing the death of his son and heir, adds another reason for his hostility to them. The Brazilians implicate others in this charge. Application had been made to the commander of the Doris frigate, then lying in the harbour, to receive the princess and family on board, and convey them by sea to Santa Cruz. Though it was the obvious duty of the English to preserve a strict neutrality, yet answer was sent that they would be received; but they, for some reason, did not go. Notwithstanding, the Brazilians still affirm that the English were notoriously favourable to the Portuguese, and for that reason would not receive the royal family; and so the heir apparent was sacrificed.

It is remarkable that an eldest son of the house of Braganza has never reigned, some accident or circumstance always having occurred to prevent it. When this young prince was born, it was universally said, that he would not succeed his father; and the event so unexpectedly occurring, has confirmed the Brazilians in the belief that their prediction was well founded.

The first despatches the emperor received on landing in the south, contained an account of the empress's death. He was in the act of

mounting his horse to proceed to the object of his journey, when the letters were put into his hand; he was greatly shocked and deeply affected; and I have heard from those about his person, that when any thing recalls her image to his mind, it never fails to excite tears. He proceeded no further in his intended campaign, but immediately returned to Rio, where he arrived on the 15th of January, 1827. His first act, after his arrival, was to dismiss his ministry.

As soon as it was known at Buenos Ayres that the emperor had proceeded to the frontier, it excited an extraordinary sensation. The president addressed a proclamation to the people, calling on them to defend what he called "the vanguard of their republic," and large reinforcements were sent to the army. The republican General Alvear addressed them in an energetic speech, in which he told them, that the emperor himself had descended from his throne to put himself at the head of his slaves, and they had now to grapple with a European tyrant and his myrmidons, who were coming to throw their chains over them. This was a prelude to the most and only important engagement in the course of the war. The Brazilian infantry had been reinforced by a battalion of Germans, a part of

the legions invited over as settlers, which afterwards caused such dreadful commotions. They were also supported by a large body of cavalry, and a park of six pieces of artillery. The republicans advanced to Ituzango, and a desperate action commenced, which was maintained on both sides with vigour and obstinacy. The Brazilians, however, gave way. The cavalry of the enemy, used to constant exercise on the extensive pampas, were more expert horsemen than their opponents. They broke their ranks in a successful charge, drove them from the field, and then attacked the infantry, which lay completely exposed, and were compelled to retire with the loss of 1200 men, according to the republican account, and ten pieces of cannon. This advantage they followed up, and it was rendered more complete by the desertion of large bodies of Brazilians to their standard, who had been previously seduced, and only waited an opportunity to join them. As they advanced, they reinstated numbers of families, who had fled before the imperialists, in their abandoned possessions; and entering the town of San Gabriel, which had been an imperial depôt, they found a great quantity of military stores, and the sum of 300,000 dollars, of which they stood much in need.

The Brazilians, after some unsuccessful efforts to stop their progress, retired before them, pursued by the republicans into their own province of Rio Grande. In his retreat, the imperial general, in order to impede the advance of the enemy by destroying any resources they might find, compelled all the inhabitants to abandon their dwellings and consume every thing behind them; and thus population, which for a series of years was slowly and laboriously advancing through this wilderness, was in one short campaign of this unhappy warfare, completely obliterated, and the country again reduced to its primitive desert. This war on human civilization was carried on in every direction. The people of Buenos Ayres had established a colony on the coast of Patagonia, and even this the Brazilians were determined to destroy. An armament of four vessels was sent to eradicate the incipient traces of civilized life even from this desert coast; happily the expedition failed; three of the vessels were taken, and the fourth narrowly escaped.

These defeats were counterbalanced by some partial successes. Maldonado, at the mouth of the river La Plata, was taken, and Admiral Brown lost two of his ships, and was himself wounded; but, fortunate for the people, all parties

were now tired and exhausted with this wild and most unprofitable contest, and the government of Buenos Ayres sent M. Garcias to Rio de Janeiro to treat for peace, on the basis of both sides abandoning the debatable land, and leaving the people to themselves. Garcias, however, forgetting the instruction he had received, after a few days' negotiation, signed, on the 24th of May, a treaty of peace, formally acknowledging Monte Video as an integral part of the empire of Brazil, and engaging that the republican troops should immediately evacuate the territories, and be reduced to the peace establishment.

When these terms were known at Buenos Ayres, they excited the strongest indignation. The common people cried out, they were betrayed, and called for war, eternal war on Brazil. The ministers, with the president, refused to ratify the treaty, as the envoy had violated his instructions, and the congress unanimously approved of their conduct. Again, therefore, hostilities commenced, and it was necessary to provide resources for them.

Meantime the period for assembling the legislative body of Brazil arrived, and on the 3d of May, 1827, the members met at Rio. The session was opened by the emperor in the

senate-house, into which he was introduced by a deputation of twenty-four representatives and fourteen senators, and he delivered a speech from the throne, which contained the following passages:—"August and honourable representatives, I meet you here in pursuance of the law, resolved to open this assembly with the same enthusiasm with which I have always performed my duty; but I cannot say with the same joy, since the place which that feeling should occupy in my imperial heart, is filled by grief and affliction for the death of my dearly beloved and ever amiable spouse, the empress. On the 11th of December, at a quarter after ten in the morning, she left this world for the mansions of the just, wherein she will assuredly dwell, as we all through faith believe that place to be destined for those who, like her, have led a virtuous and religious life."

After stating that the war must be continued, till Buenos Ayres acknowleged the independence of the Brazilian nation and the integrity of the empire, with the incorporation of the province of Cis-Platina, and recommending a system of finance to cover the expenses necessarily to be incurred, he thus spoke of the judicial power:

"We have no code, no forms of process

suited to the spirit of the age; the laws interfere with each other; the judges are embarrassed by the decisions; the parties in suits are injured; criminals escape punishment: the salaries of the judges are not sufficient to secure them against the temptation of a base and sordid interest; and therefore it is necessary that this assembly should speedily and earnestly proceed to accomplish an object so important to public tranquillity and happiness."

Notwithstanding this just and frightful picture of the administration of justice in the country, and the recommendation which accompanied it, nothing has hitherto been done, and the present state of the tribunals is a grievance which comes home every day to the business and bosoms of every man in Brazil.

Among the unfortunate events to which the war gave rise, was one which was attended with the most fearful and disastrous effects at the moment, and which, in its consequences, may be highly injurious to the best interests of the country. In order that as few persons as possible might be drawn from agriculture in the interior, and from the pursuits of commerce and manufactures in the maritime cities, to recruit the army on the frontiers, it was determined to engage a number of foreigners as soldiers; first

to do duty as military, and then be located as agriculturists, after a certain term of service; and to that end Germans, who from the family connexion of the emperor, and Irish, who from the redundancy of population at home, might be easily procured, were invited to Brazil for the purpose.

This project was well conceived, and, had the inducements held out been fulfilled with punctuality and good faith, this influx of Europeans, introducing their modes of agriculture and the mechanic arts into a new country, would have been of vast advantage to the existing state of Brazil. But the moment the project was adopted by the government, it roused all the prejudices and suspicions of the people. Since the expulsion of the Portuguese, the greatest jealousy existed against every European; some imagined the present plan merely a scheme to introduce and create an army of foreign mercenaries, who, having no sympathy or bond of connexion with the people, would be the ready instruments of supporting a despotic government; and this, in fact, did enter into the contemplation of the emperor and his ministers, who supposed they would be an available check on the growing spirit of democracy. But even if this objection did not exist, the

amalgamation of Brazilians with foreigners was still a difficult thing, and all classes had a strong repugnance to the introduction of any strangers but slaves from the coast of Africa. Every secret expedient, therefore, was resorted to, to render the plan abortive, and the event proved with what success.

In October, 1826, Colonel Cotter, an Irish officer in the imperial service, entered into an engagement with the Brazilian government to bring over a number of his countrymen. It does not appear what were the precise terms which he was authorized to offer to them; but, as far as I can collect from several I have conversed with, who remained behind in Brazil, and from other sources, they were as follow:—Every man was to receive pay and allowances equal to one shilling per day, one pound of beef, and one pound of bread as rations, and were to be employed four hours each day in learning military exercises, to be ready to act as soldiers if called on, but not to be sent out of the province of Rio unless in time of war or invasion; and at the end of five years of such engagement, to be discharged from all military service, and located as farmers on land, each having fifty acres assigned him.

With these powers, Colonel Cotter proceeded

to Cork, caused notices to be affixed to chapel doors, and instructed clergymen to give it out from the altars, in different parts of the south of Ireland. The notifications were received with great joy by the people: the exceeding distress of the poor peasantry of that part of Ireland, as well from exuberant population as want of employment, is notorious, and they were eager to avail themselves of the proposal. Land was the great object of their competition at home, and they who thought themselves fortunate in obtaining a few acres at an exorbitant rent in Ireland, were transported at the idea of receiving a grant of fifty acres, rent free, in Brazil. Many, therefore, as they told me, sold their farms at home, and laid out the small portion of money they could raise, in purchasing agricultural implements, conceiving that their military service was to be merely local, and would no more prevent their attending to their land, than if they were members of yeomanry corps in their own country. Among them were mechanics, who looked forward to exercise their calling to advantage in Rio, and had brought out the implements of their trade; and among them certainly were many, whose idle habits led them to prefer a military life, and were ready to engage as

soldiers, careless of the terms of their service. Of these descriptions, two thousand four hundred persons were collected, some of them, as was to be expected, of indifferent characters and dissolute manners; but the majority decent, respectable people, who brought out with them their wives and families, and who would be an acquisition to any country as settlers, but particularly to Brazil.

Every thing was provided for their accommodation on leaving their own country; the ships were well found, stores and provisions of a good quality were not wanting, and the people thought themselves highly fortunate in this mode of emigration. They had been long expected in Brazil, and it was natural to suppose that every thing would have been ready for their reception; but their arrival was the signal for annoying them, and that system of petty persecution commenced which roused them into mutiny, and finally effected the purposes for which it was resorted to, by driving them from the country.

The minister of war was at that time S. Barbozo, and from his subsequent hostility to the foreigners, it is to be presumed he was the instrument of their first annoyances, which were in his department. When the transports arrived,

nothing was ready for the accommodation of the men. They were kept for three or four days on board, and when at length they were landed, they were thrust into dirty empty barracks, without the smallest preparation of any kind for their comforts or wants. They had no beds to sleep on, not even a mat to keep them from the bare ground, which is always provided for Brazilian soldiers. This comfortless state was still increased by want of provisions, for they were kept starving for two days without any distribution of rations, and when at length it was made, they were so bad in quality that the men could not eat them, but sold them for a trifle to the English to feed their horses; they were also deficient in quantity, and so irregularly given, that they were frequently afterwards forty-eight hours without receiving any issue. Many of them contracted fevers, and other sickness, from privation and anxiety, and in this state of debility were seen crawling about the streets of Rio. Application was made to the Brazilian government to provide them with medicines and necessaries, but no notice was taken; and they would have perished on the roads, where they were sometimes obliged to lie down, but for the humanity of Doctors Coates and Dixon, who supplied them with medicine

from their own pockets. For some time they received no pay at all, and when at length it was ordered, it was much less than they were promised.*

In this state of disappointment and growing discontent, there was not the smallest pains taken to give them any habit of order or regularity. They remained in their quarters, idle and unemployed, dirty and neglected, and in the same clothes in which they had arrived, ragged and squalid, without the habits or appearance of common decency. Sometimes they were permitted to leave their barracks when and how they pleased, and to remain as long as suited their humour in the vendas, or public-houses. Here a cheap and ruinous kind of rum is sold, called caxas, and in this they were permitted, if not encouraged, to indulge freely. Thus situated, and highly susceptible of excitement, an engine of irritation was applied to them, of an annoyance so intolerable, that no person, under any circumstance, could bear it patiently.

The miserable slaves of Rio, employed only as beasts of burden in the streets, are, of all

* I am told it amounted to seven vintems, which, at the rate of exchange when I was at Rio, would not average at sixpence, and they were promised one shilling.

classes of the human race, by far the most abandoned and degraded. Used merely as inferior animals, without the smallest reference to their being endowed with the faculty of reason, they are driven all day, and turned loose in the evening; and by a strange inconsistency, allowed the most licentious and unrestrained habits. They go along the streets frequently drunk, shouting, hallooing, and fighting; and when one considers that there are fifty or sixty thousand of this class, in a large and licentious city, and the great majority of its population, it is fearful to contemplate the consequences which may arise, some time or other, from their ferocious passions. Yet these were the instruments used to goad and irritate the strangers. They first insulted them whenever they met them, by calling them white slaves, "escravos brancos," and they pointed to their rags and dirt, as a proof of their being not so good, or so well treated, as themselves. Whenever they appeared outside their barracks, they were attacked in this way, and constant skirmishes and riots occurred between individuals and parties on both sides. In these encounters, if the Irish officers interfered, and seized any slaves, who they knew were the aggressors and commenced the disturbance, to deliver

them to the police, they were detained merely a few hours, and then liberated to repeat the offence; if, on the contrary, any of the strangers were complained of, they were committed to the dungeons of the fortresses, and if not closely confined, were dragged out only to be worked as galley slaves; and in this way, respectable people have told me, they often saw them fettered in the same chain with black slave-felons, as if it was the system to degrade them to that rank, and not suffer them to be held in higher consideration.

In this state of things, a body of the Irish, quartered in the barracks of Praya Vermelha, were marched to the Campo d'Acclamacão, and in their way it was necessary to pass the Carioca, a fountain where a large collection of blacks continually attend to draw water. The moment they appeared, an immediate insurrection of the blacks took place, and an attack was made on these unarmed men, quietly passing through the streets; they repelled it with sticks and fists, and the blacks fled: but from that time no recruit could appear in any part of the town, without being assaulted. Even the officers failed to preserve that respect for their rank, which would be secured to any others; they were the indiscriminate object of attack by any slaves

they met, as if the general system was to degrade and exasperate the whole corps without distinction. In the Rua dos Barbonios is a barrack, near a fountain attended by blacks, and here the parties came into constant collision. The blacks, who seemed, as it were, trained to insult the Irish, constantly attacked the sentries, and even climbed up the windows, and assaulted, with stones and other missiles, those who were inside quietly sleeping in their quarters. The consequence was a very serious riot, which lasted two days, and the loss of some lives. In these conflicts, the people of the town looked on with satisfaction, and were frequently seen setting on the negroes, as I have seen Turks hallooing their swarms of dogs at christian passengers.

The time had now arrived when a fearful retaliation seemed at hand, and threatened the whole town with destruction. The Irish had been about half a year in the country, and they still remained in the same state of neglect, contempt, and insubordination. A few, indeed, who had entered as grenadiers, had received clothes, and some partial improvement had been attempted in the rations; but the great body remained the same, the causes of discontent every day increasing. The state of the German

troops was little better. They complained that the promises made to them were not fulfilled, that their pay was embezzled; and the whole only wanted some spark to set the inflammable materials in a blaze. They were distributed in three large barracks in different parts of the town: the Germans, in the Praya Vermelha, near the mouth of the harbour, at one extremity of the city, and at the barrack of S. Christovão, at the other; and the Irish, nearly midway between both, at the Campo d'Acclamacão, towards the centre of the town.

On the 9th of June, 1828, as an alfares, or ensign, was returning from his rounds, after the ave-maria, or sun-set, he was met by a German soldier, who refused to take off his bonnet as he passed. The alfares ordered him into confinement, and he was sentenced to receive fifty lashes for insubordination. A representation was made that he had been a well-conducted man, since the formation of the corps; but this did not avail, and he was led out to undergo his sentence in the square of the barrack of S. Christovão. He demanded to be tried by a court-martial, and refused to take off his jacket; but he was ordered to be seized and bound, and the jacket cut from his back; his sentence was quintupled, and two hundred and fifty were

ordered instead of fifty. He received two hundred and ten of his punishment, but the soldiers now became impatient, and, actuated by one spirit, began to stamp with their feet, calling out not to kill the man; and as the officer still persisted to inflict the full punishment, the whole corps burst into a spontaneous mutiny, released the prisoner, proceeded with shouts and menaces to the pa[illegible]ce in their neighbourhood, and demanded to see the emperor. He refused to present himself; but gave them to understand if they had any complaint to make, they should send a deputation of two or three and he would listen to them, and they returned to their barracks. Meantime the Irish, at the Campo d'Acclamacão, hearing what had happened, proceeded to S. Christovão, some by land and some in boats, to the amount of fifty or sixty; and, resolving now to make a common cause with the Germans, encouraged them by shouts and acclamations to persevere. The mutiny now assumed a most alarming aspect: the magazine of ammunition was forced open, the quarters of the officers were attacked, the houses of the major and quarter-master were plundered, and several officers were pursued and just escaped with their lives.

On the next day, the news of the mutiny at

S. Christovão was received at the Praya Vermelha. The Germans quartered here had just returned from Pernambuco, and were in a state of irritation little less violent than their comrades. It had been the custom to stop the pay of the soldiers, as in the French army in the time of Napoleon, as a punishment for offences, and in this way, under various pretexts, the officers pocketed the greater part of it. The major, whose name was Teola, was a man of low extraction and bad character, and was greatly detested by the men. He was an Italian, and had been waiter at the Hotel du Nord, in the Rue Direita. It is said that his wife, who was a comely person, had attracted notice, and he was immediately raised from his humble station to the commission which he held in the German regiment. He had been long accused of embezzling their pay, and frequent complaints were made; but his influence in high quarters had hitherto baffled all applications, and the soldiers were now determined to take into their own hands that redress, which they could not obtain. As the prejudice against him was known to be very strong, he was advised not to appear on parade this day, where some violence was likely to break out. He, however, disregarded the caution, and his appearance was the signal for a

general mutiny. He was attacked by the soldiers, and fled for refuge to Colonel Macgregor, who would not, it is said, but who probably could not, protect him. He then ran to make his escape over the walls of the barracks, but he was overtaken and dragged down; and while lying on the ground, he was stabbed by the bayonets of the sentinels, and crushed to death with heaps of large stones cast on him by the exasperated soldiers. Two other officers, who attempted to interfere for him, were severely wounded. It does not appear that the Irish here took any part in the assassination.

The body of the major was brought to be buried in the cemetery, and the two wounded officers to be received into the hospital of the Misericordia, and a rumour was now industriously circulated through Rio, that the German regiments were marching in from both extremities of the city, to join the Irish at the Campo d'Acclamacão, and then proceed to burn and plunder the town. It was now that the sanguinary policy of those who were hostile to the Europeans, began to display itself. The Brazilian troops were immediately ordered under arms, and the minister of war sent directions to the commandant, the Conde de Rio Pardo, "to destroy every man, to give no quarter, but to

exterminate the whole of the strangers;"* and lest the brave and humane commandant should not execute these orders, an expedient was resorted to, as terrible to others as it was dangerous to themselves—that was, a license to the Moleques, or blacks, and the rest of the rabble, to take up arms. I had seen the frightful effects of this among the Turks; but the idea of fifty or sixty thousand black slaves, and such slaves in a state of high excitement, armed with knives and daggers, let loose on a city, was an experiment at which humanity shudders.

A large crowd of them was soon collected in the Campo d'Acclamacão, and a tumult immediately commenced with the Irish. These latter had now become infuriate like the Germans—had attacked the police barracks in the neighbourhood, and having seized the arms, began to fire in all directions. They then broke open the vendas, and many of them having drank caxas to excess, burst into private houses and committed great excesses. A regular warfare soon ensued between them and the armed Moleques, joined by a number of Brazilians of the lowest description, and the Campo and the

* Mata tudo Sr. Conde, não da quartel á ninguem, mata esses estrangeiros.

streets adjoining were filled with dead and wounded bodies.

The Brazilian government now applied to the French and English ministers for a force of marines, from the ships of war of their respective nations lying in the harbour, which was readily granted. The French were immediately landed at the trem, and the English at the arsenal, and were prepared to protect the city if any attempt should be made against it. In the mean time, a battalion of the regiment of militia of the Minas Geräes, some cavalry, and a field-piece, proceeded to the Campo to restore order. They did not act with the furious inhumanity recommended by the minister of war. They first argued with the insurgents, then fired blank cartridges, and at length had recourse to ball as the last expedient. The insurgents had no arms of their own, and used only those they had wrested from the police, amounting to fifty or sixty muskets. Their ammunition was exhausted, and those whom insult and intoxication had driven to madness, had returned to their senses, and retired to their barracks. The Germans quietly submitted, and on the evening of the 12th of June, every thing was tranquil, after three days of intense anxiety.

While the conduct of the military was

humane and praiseworthy, that of the armed rabble was marked by the most atrocious ferocity. The Moleques rushed on every foreigner they met in the neighbourhood, with their knives, and butchered them with the most savage mutilation; and some, I am told, were hunted down, and then torn limb from limb, by the bloodhounds that pursued them. Several of the Irish, who were artisans, industriously exercised their trades, and were doing well at Rio. One of them, a tailor, was returning to his barracks, with a bundle of clothes under his arm, entirely ignorant of the insurrection that had taken place. He was met by two Moleques in a street leading to the Campo, who rushed at him with their facas, and having stabbed him in several places, ripped up his belly, and left him, with his bowels hanging out, weltering on the pavement. One fellow, a corpulent mulatto, of a very ferocious aspect, was pointed out to me afterwards at the butchery of S. Luzie, where he has now some appropriate employment. He was seen, after tranquillity was restored, brandishing a bloody sabre over his head, and boasting it was stained with the blood of five foreigners, whom he had killed.

The number of persons who lost their lives is

variously stated at from sixty to a hundred; and about twice that number wounded. Many respectable Brazilians, in the vicinity of the Campo d'Acclamacão, were killed, in defending their houses and properties, when the insurgents burst them open. Many of the insurgents lay down in the streets and fell asleep, overcome by fatigue and intoxication; and in that state of insensibility were stabbed by the Moleques. As this disposition for blood continued after the cause was past, and the excitement over, it was found necessary to issue, on the 13th of June, a second edital, prohibiting any person from carrying arms, but especially slaves, after the edital was posted, under severe punishment. They had been most imprudently called on to take them up *para salvar a patria*, and it was found imperatively necessary to compel them to lay them down, for the same reason.

Of 2,400 Irish who had been invited, and arrived in Brazil, not more than 200 were concerned in the insurrection; and these were generally young men, totally neglected, and left to themselves, to follow the impulse of any passion excited in them. They were without officers or arms, yet they caused much terror and anxiety, in a large and populous city, for three days. It was determined, therefore, to

send them all back to their own country; and the object of those who laboured to bring that end about, was completely answered. They were immediately embarked, and placed on board the ships of war in the harbour, till transports could be provided for them. The emperor himself seemed very well disposed towards them; and I am told by those who witnessed the fact, that he shed tears of anxiety and vexation, when he heard the state into which they were degraded. It had been his custom frequently to attend divine service, when it was performed for the Irish at the Praya Vermelha, where he freely knelt down amongst them. His condescension, however, was suspected. An absurd rumour had been circulated, that if this ceremony was performed three times, they were bound to him, as soldiers, for unlimited service. On the third Sunday none but the officers attended—the men all disappeared—a strong proof of their repugnance to such an engagement, and their determination to resist it. He now gave every direction for their ample accommodation, on their return home; and Mr. Gordon, the British minister, and the English admiral, had power in his name to supply them with every necessary.

On this occasion it was expedient to collect them all, and it was discovered that many of

them had been arrested and confined in various prisons. Mr. Aston, the Secretary of Legation to the British Mission, with that promptness and humanity which every one who knows him will give him credit for, immediately applied to the proper authorities to have them found out; but so little interest did they take in the life or liberty of those foreigners, that they could give no information about them. At length he found thirty of them confined in the dungeon of the fortress of Villegagnon. On one occasion the whole of the officers had been arrested, and shut up in the cells of the prisons in the different islands. After eighteen or twenty days' incarceration, however, they were liberated, and never could learn why they had been confined; but numbers of inferior rank remained behind, till they were altogether forgotten. Such was the case of these poor men. When they emerged from these catacombs, they were in the most miserable state of destitution and disease, their bodies ulcerated with sores and covered with vermin, and their skins so raw and tender from putrescency and mortification, that when it was necessary to clothe them for the sake of decency, to enable them again to appear, they could not bear the painful touch of any covering.

They were a fine body of young men, and of good character. They had been called on to take the military oath, but they refused. They affirmed they had come out as settlers; if they were located as such, they had no objection to be enrolled as militia, learn military duty, and be ready to turn out to defend their own or any other part of the country invaded: but they persisted in refusing to take the oath tendered to them as mere soldiers, for unlimited service. For this offence they were represented as mutineers, and thrown at once into these dismal dungeons, where they had remained totally neglected, and must in a short time have perished in a state of putridity, had they not been relieved by the humane and timely interference of Mr. Aston. Two hundred and fifty were embarked in the Moro Castle, on the 3d July, 1828, and sailed for Ireland. The Phœbe followed with 150 more, with the Highlander, and a Swedish ship, carrying in all 1400 persons back to their native land. It was industriously given out, that many of these persons had carried off plate and other valuables from the houses they had plundered, and a search was made among their boxes and trunks. Nothing was found to justify the suspicion, and then it was said, that to avoid detection they had cast all these valuables into the sea.

About 400 were left behind, engaged in different employments. A body of them, to the amount of 220 persons, forming 101 families, were conveyed to Bahia, and located at Taporoa, in the comarca of Ilheos, where they formed a colony, directed by a commissioner appointed to regulate their affairs. It was the only portion of the emigrants with whom good faith was observed; and it appears, from the report of the Viscount Camamu, president of the assembly of the province, that they were deserving of every care and attention. Several who remained at Rio I afterwards met and conversed with. They were doing well; and the whole, had they been properly encouraged, would have done the same. Some men from Waterford and Lismore were engaged in a quarry in the rear of our residence, preparing blocks of granite for building, and by their industry and good conduct were earning five patacs (about seven shillings) a day, and making a comfortable independence. Another family, of the name of Cook, from the county of Tipperary, had been recommended to Messrs. Marsh and Watson, who located them on a farm in the Organ Mountains, where I visited them with Mr. Watson. The farm was in the depth of a forest, fourteen or fifteen miles within the recesses of the mountain.

The way led through the wildest scenery; and on the bank of a river, in the centre of a forest, we found these colonists. They had built a large and comfortable house with a rustic portico, and thatched it very neatly with palm branches, whose regular fronds formed a tasty roof, the stems and pinnate leaves of which were very elegantly disposed in the thatch. On the other side of the river, which we crossed by two trees forming a rustic bridge, was a large shed for cattle, and other conveniences; and rising up the hill was an extensive plantation of coffee, behind which, descending into a glen, was a rich field of Indian corn in high health, with gourds, mandioca, and a variety of other produce of Brazilian agriculture. On our return the good woman had prepared for us a plentiful dish of bacon and eggs, with fried cakes of maize; and our entertainment concluded with whisky, which our host had contrived to distil from his coffee plantation. When I contemplated this comfortable house and abundant farm, rescued from the heart of a Brazilian forest, cultivated by persons who in their own country could not make out a scanty livelihood in a miserable hovel, I could not help feeling the deepest regret, that 2400 who had left their homes were not, as they might have been, so located. It would

have abstracted so many individuals from an overflowing people perishing from want, and added a valuable population to a country, where millions of fertile acres are lying waste for lack of hands to cultivate them.

The greater part of the Irish who returned home, were in a disabled state. Hardship, wounds, privation, and sickness had affected them more or less; but the ailment under which they principally laboured was lameness. Not furnished with shoes, nor able to provide them, their feet were attacked with the bichu, or insect of the country, which burrowed in myriads in their naked feet, and caused the most frightful ulcerations. Many of the men, therefore, are lame beggars about the streets, or incurables in the hospitals of Cork. Many who had left comfortable farms, are reduced to common labourers; and of all who returned home, there is not one, perhaps, who is not now enduring want and misery.

The Germans, as they were regularly enrolled, were subject to martial law as mutineers; and the ringleaders in the riot were tried, and some convicted. One of them was shortly after executed. On the formation of the German corps, as they were generally Lutherans, the Rev. Mr. Crane, British Chaplain at Rio, officiated

for them; and when this man was ordered for execution, he was attended, by order of the emperor, by the chaplain, to prepare him for death. Mr. Crane, from whom I derived some of the foregoing statements, informed me he was a tall vigorous young man, six feet high, of singularly determined character. He told him he had neglected his early religious impressions, but did not then wish to recall them; and begged him not to press him on the subject, as his only wish was to die like a soldier, and such considerations as he proposed, would only disturb him. A Catholic clergyman was sent to him with no better success. He dismissed him at once, telling him to go and reform his master, who more wanted it. He walked to the Campo d'Acclamacão, where he was executed, with a pipe in his mouth, frequently turning round and conversing with the greatest indifference with his comrades, who were to shoot him, and who followed immediately behind him. The only mark of interest or concern he evinced on any subject, was with respect to the place of his burial. He asked where he was to be laid, and he was answered, in the Misericordia. As this is the cemetery attached to the hospital, and the great receptacle for negroes, he expressed a strong repugnance to be buried among them,

and confounded with the slaves who had behaved in such a manner to his comrades. He therefore earnestly requested permission to be buried in the English burying-ground, which Mr. Crane promised, and he then died with the most perfect unconcern. His regiment was sent off to the south.

Thus ended a project for the gradual introduction of Europeans into Brazil, from which much good was reasonably expected. To form a counterpoise to the fearful superiority of the slave population, and increase as much as possible the number of white inhabitants; to colonize the immense tracts of fertile land now lying waste, and cultivate the soil with the vigorous arms of freemen, bringing with them the lights and improvements of Europe, instead of the enormous importations annually of blacks from Africa, was certainly the object of an enlightened policy. But the vigilant suspicion of the people, ever on the watch to guard against any supposed instruments of despotism, and the universal and inveterate prejudices still existing against strangers, rendered the measure highly unpopular in Brazil. It was supposed that the difference of the religion of the Germans had some influence in increasing this prejudice, but the similarity of that of the Irish did

not procure them more favour. The Aurora, the Astræa, and other genuine national papers, teemed with equal invectives against both, talked boastfully of "delivering themselves from the German and Irish invasion," and studiously avoided all notice of the French and English marines who landed to assist them.

The emperor, however, acknowledged their services in a flattering manner, by paying a complimentary visit on the occasion to the British fleet. They were drawn up in line to receive him; and he, with the young Queen of Portugal and a numerous cortège, repaired on board the admiral's ship, the Ganges, on the 20th of June. The imperial standard was hoisted at the mast-head, and the band played the national and constitutional hymn, composed by the emperor himself. He examined with great attention the different parts of the ship; and when their uses were explained to him, he said, "J'en profiterai." He saw the crew at dinner, and tasted their soup, which he pronounced to be "bien bon," but he only smelled to their grog. In passing between decks, he remarked some thirty-two pounders lying in the racks, and stooping down in a careless manner, he laid his hand on the summit of one of them, raised it with apparent ease, and having

examined it, deposited it again without apparent effort. This was considered an extraordinary effort of muscular strength, as his fingers are short, and he could only grasp a small portion of the surface. He was entertained in the state-room, the admiral and post-captains attending on him, and he and the young queen alone sitting down. Two of the admiral's sons, young boys, waited as pages on Dona Maria, and the little group excited great interest. During the repast, the emperor gave the health of George the Fourth; and the admiral in return gave that of the emperor and the queen, each of which was followed by a salutation of sixty-three guns. On his return he insisted on taking the admiral in his own barge, and expressed himself highly gratified by his visit.

The emperor was exceedingly displeased with his ministry for their conduct in this unfortunate mutiny. He considered them particularly culpable, first in exciting it, and then in not taking immediate measures to suppress it; but the principal object of his anger was the minister at war, for lending himself as an instrument to promote the designs of those who disliked the introduction of the foreign troops, and had used such means to get rid of them. He, therefore, directly ordered this minister to surrender his

seals of office. The rest, however, made common cause with their colleague, and declared, if he resigned, they would do so too. The emperor, on this occasion, shewed his prompt and determined character. The whole cabinet were on one day dismissed, and on the next a new one was appointed.

Another result also was connected with this affair, of real and important benefit to Brazil. The alarming mutiny of the troops intended to be employed, and their total disorganization, at once deprived government of a resource of men, which they now began to find it difficult to supply from the exhausted country, from which almost all its agricultural hands had been already abstracted; and at length this petty warfare, the most unnecessary and unintelligible, as well as the most ruinous to all concerned, was ended. Negotiations were again opened, under the auspices of his Excellency, the British minister, and both parties at length agreed to acknowledge the independence of the Banda Oriental, and the troops of Brazil and of Buenos Ayres were mutually to evacuate the country. It was agreed, also, that a provisional government should be formed by the people themselves, and a constitution drawn up, to be submitted to both states, for their approbation, before it was

sworn to; and when so ratified, to be supported by them, for five years, against any attempt to alter it; but, after that period, the people of the new Cis-Platine state to be left in full and free enjoyment of their independence, to manage all their own affairs without foreign interference.

This termination to the war was received with universal disappointment and discontent in Brazil. The Banda Oriental, though originally Spanish, and unjustly seized on by the Portuguese, had yet been incorporated as a province with the Brazilian empire, and made one of the nineteen stars that glittered in the imperial arms. The people had not forgotten the emperor's declaration, that the war must continue till it should be recognized as an integral part of the empire; and in that determination they had sustained a ruinous contest. When they now saw this object abandoned, and what they considered their territory surrendered, they could not conceal their mortification and disappointment. The petty feelings of ambition and cupidity inherent in the mind of man, were never, perhaps, more strongly exemplified than on this occasion. They saw the prosperity of the country totally arrested, its resources wasted, its commerce impeded, its agriculture neglected, and its population diminishing, in this absurd contest; yet every

individual whom I conversed with, would rather have continued to suffer all these evils, than that a remote and small fragment should be broken from their vast dominions, which was not their own, and which, after all, was not to form any part of a rival state, but to become independent like themselves. Every little shopkeeper in Rio thought himself personally degraded by the dismemberment of his empire, though it had been only a few years in existence; and it added another motive of dislike to the English, under whose auspices the treaty of peace had been concluded.

The war was attended with many disastrous effects. It checked the progress of population, destroyed the improvements of agriculture, suspended the diffusion of useful knowledge, retarded the formation of the national character, and diverted the attention of the nation from all its intended useful projects; it impoverished the country, caused a vast accumulation of national debt, abstracted from circulation all the valuable metals, and substituted a paper and copper currency, and even that last at an immense discount; it involved the government in serious disputes with friendly powers, Great Britain, France, and the United States, to whom they were obliged to pay considerable sums for spoliation

on their property, by the absurd attempt at blockading the river of Plate; and it sunk into the lowest estimation the military character of the people, when a single city, containing a population equal to scarcely one-half of that of its own capital, could baffle all their attempts, and finally compel a great empire to succumb to its handful of soldiers and sailors.

Immediately on the cessation of the war, and when their services were no longer necessary, the foreigners who served in the army were treated with very little ceremony, and their feelings and wants totally disregarded. Several whose health had suffered severely, either from wounds or climate, had requested some little indulgences, which they might reasonably expect when the campaign was over; but they were all harshly refused. Captain Ayre, an Englishman in the naval service, applied for leave of absence for a few months, to re-establish his injured constitution, by a visit to the upper country. He was informed by the minister of marine, that he had the option at once to resign his commission, and quit the service; but if he wished to retain it, he must not be absent a moment. On another occasion, twenty-seven foreign officers were dismissed on parade, without any provision for the future, or remuneration for past

services; twenty-four were Germans, who were ordered to embark in ships provided for them, and that with such precipitation, that they were not allowed to go back for their great coats. A few days after, nine more, among whom were some English or Irish, were discharged in the same unceremonious manner.

The death of Dom John at this time, was an event fraught with important consequences both to Brazil and Portugal. He had enjoyed good health since his illness in 1805, with the exception of the hereditary infirmity of his family, an œdematous swelling of his legs. On the 4th of March, 1826, he dined with the monks at the convent of S. Jeronymo, in Lisbon, in apparent good health; but on his return to the palace of Bemposto, he was suddenly seized with a fit of vomiting, which was succeeded by fainting and convulsions. The next day, after taking some chicken broth, (the first remedy usually resorted to by Portuguese physicians,) the vomiting returned with increased violence. Having obtained some remission of the symptoms, on the following day he appointed his daughter, the Infanta Isabella, regent, assisted by a council of ministers, and continued to linger on till the 9th, when a fresh access brought on the crisis

of his fate, and on the 10th, at six o'clock in the evening, he expired.

On the 25th of April following, an official account of his death arrived in Brazil, and on the next day, the emperor assumed the character of King of Portugal, and issued a decree confirming the regency appointed by the late king. He then published an act of amnesty for all political offences, drew up a constitutional charter for the Portuguese monarchy, which his father had promised in May, 1823; addressed seventy-seven patents for the creation of a chamber of peers, and, on the 2d of May, abdicated in favour of his daughter, Dona Maria, having been himself sovereign of Portugal but six days, and in that short period, completed a new system, and framed a new code of laws, for the future government of that kingdom. Sir Charles Stuart happened to be at Rio, on public business, and having accomplished it, he was about to return home. To his care the emperor confided these important documents, and they were brought by him to Europe. This has given rise to an opinion, that the constitution was drawn up with the concurrence, and promulgated with the co-operation, of the British ministry; but it does not appear that, however

they might approve of its principles, they had any further participation in it than the accidental courtesy of the British ambassador, for more safe and speedy conveyance, taking it to Europe in the ship of war that conveyed himself.*

In order to give stability to the new order of things, as a mark of affection to his brother, and to comply with the ancient regulation of the Portuguese monarchy, established by the Cortes of Lamego, that the first daughter of the king, being heiress to the crown, should marry a Portuguese, so that the crown should not come to strangers,† it was resolved that Dona Maria should marry her uncle Dom Miguel, as by ancient usage "such mixture is not held a stain" in either Spain or Portugal.

Dona Maria had been the first-born of the emperor, when Prince of Beira, and her birth was hailed by the Brazilians as a circumstance of the highest domestic congratulation. When the pregnancy of the princess was announced, prayers were offered up, and the sacrament

* Sir Charles Stuart's letter is a curious proof of the hasty manner in which the constitution was framed. "He (the emperor) then produced his project of a constitution already completed, to the compilation of which he had devoted the greater part of the week."— *Letter from Rio, April* 30, 1826.

† Sit ita in sempiternum, quod prima filia regis recipiat maritum de Portugalia, ut non veniat regnum ad extraneos.

exposed in all the churches, for her happy accouchement; and on Palm Sunday, the 4th of April, 1819, at five o'clock in the evening, repeated discharges of cannon from the fortresses, and other demonstrations of joy, announced "that heaven had given to the Portuguese nation the first-fruits of the nuptials of the prince and princess." The 3d of May, so often fixed on as an epoch of events in Brazil, because it was the day of its discovery, was appointed for her baptism, and she received the names of Dona Maria da Gloria, Joanna, Carlotta, Leopoldina da Cruz, Francisca, Xavier de Paula, Izidora, Michaela, Gabriela, Raphaela, Gongaza.

Particular churches in Brazil, as in other catholic countries, are celebrated for their efficacious interference in different cases of human infirmities: that of the church of Nossa Senhora da Gloria is eminently so, and always resorted to by married women in a state of pregnancy, who offer, at the shrine of our Lady, their vows for a happy confinement. This was constantly the practice of the Princess Leopoldina, who was seen every Sunday and holy-day in this church at the foot of the altar. In gratitude, therefore, for her propitious protection, she devoted her infant to her patroness; and on the 27th of June, the day of the

Purification in the Portuguese church, she was solemnly presented at the sanctuary. To this circumstance it is that she owes the name, by which she has been generally recognized, among the numerous ones conferred on her.

It would seem that the project of his daughter's marriage with her uncle had been contemplated by Dom Pedro immediately on her birth, as is evident from the following passage in his correspondence with his father, from his letter, dated 19th June, 1822. "I request your majesty to permit my dear brother Miguel to come hither, in any manner that you may think proper, because he is much esteemed here, and the Brazilians wish him to assist me in rendering service to Brazil, and *in due time to marry my pretty daughter Maria.*"* The consummation of it, therefore, at this time, was merely carrying into effect a project long determined on. The legal part of the ceremony was now performed, by procuration, between the parties at Vienna, where Dom Miguel then was, and the ecclesiastical part was only wanting to complete it.

* "Peço a V. M. que deixe vir o mano Miguel para ca, seja como fôr, porque elle he aqui muito estimado, e os Brazileiros o querem ao pé de mim, para me ajudar a servir no Brazil, e *a seu tempo cazar com a minha linda filha Maria.*"

Meantime the affairs of Portugal became exceedingly disturbed by the conflicting opinions of those who approved and disapproved of the constitutional charter, and the agitation was greatly increased by the enfeebled state of the regent. To put an end to these dissensions, and give an efficient government to the kingdom, the emperor resolved to anticipate the period when his brother, Dom Miguel, was to assume that office, and immediately invested him with it. By a decree, therefore, signed at Rio, on the 3d of July, 1827, he stated that, taking into consideration the intelligence, activity, frankness, and character of the Infante Dom Miguel, his beloved brother, he, for many weighty reasons, appointed him his lieutenant, giving him all the powers which belonged to himself, as king of Portugal and Algarve, under the constitutional charter. In consequence of this, Dom Miguel wrote to his sister from Vienna, that he was determined to maintain inviolate the laws of the kingdom, and the institutions legally granted by his august brother, to cause them to be observed by others, and by them govern the kingdom. Accordingly he set out from Vienna, with this apparent resolution, and arrived in England, where he received the address of the Portuguese

residents, on the same subject, and proceeded to Portugal. On his arrival in Lisbon, the 26th of February, in the presence of the two chambers of the cortes, and of the assembled court, he confirmed by his oath what he had written to his sister; he solemnly swore to observe the constitution, and cause it to be observed by others, as established by the charter.

Notwithstanding these appearances, every thing portended the approaching abolition of the new order of things. Mobs every where insulted the constitutionalists. The officers of the army, supposed to be so, were dismissed. The chamber of deputies was dissolved, the charter was burnt, and addresses were got up in the municipalities, praying the regent to assume the crown; and such was the general feeling of disapprobation to his proceedings, that foreign ministers, at the court of Lisbon, refused to hold any communication with him. It was in vain that the Portuguese endeavoured to arrest his despotic progress. An insurrection took place at Oporto, and the troops proceeded towards Lisbon; but they hesitated, returned, and were totally dispersed; and, indeed, it appeared, that, however large and respectable a body the constitutionalists were in numbers, talent, and wealth, they were greatly ex-

ceeded by their opponents, who, numerically speaking, may be said to have constituted the people of the country.

On the dissolution of the constitutional cortes, the ancient assembly of the kingdom was convened in its place. This obsolete body had been first convoked, at Lamego, by Alphonso the First, in 1143, for the purpose of establishing the succession of the crown. It had, however, fallen latterly into such entire disuse, that it had not been called together since the year 1697. It now met again, after an interval of 131 years, on the 23d of June, 1828, and, without hesitation or debate, decided that Dom Miguel was the only legal sovereign, that Dom Pedro had no right over the kingdom, and all the institutions he had imposed were null and illegal. On the 28th, Dom Miguel, by an ordinance, confirmed their decision, and formally assumed the title of Dom Miguel, by the grace of God, King of Portugal and the Algarves.

When the news of these things arrived in Brazil, it excited a correspondent emotion among all classes. The people thought they saw the downfal of their own constitution in that of Portugal, and the emperor saw the kingdom wrested from his daughter, and the

crown placed on the head of an usurper. He immediately addressed a proclamation to the Portuguese, and, affecting to lay the blame on others, he displayed the bitterness of his feelings against Dom Miguel. To the compulsion under which he laboured he attributed his conduct. "To entertain a contrary opinion," said he, "would amount to considering him a *traitor* to the assurances and protestations he made to me whilst I was his king, and reputing him *perjured* to his oath which he freely took at Vienna, and ratified at Lisbon." In conversation, I have been told, he could not speak of him without bursting into a rage, and he has seized the breast of the person to whom he was speaking, and shaking him violently, he said, he wished it was the usurper that was in his grasp. One of the saloons of the palace contained portraits of all the Braganza family, and among the rest that of Dom Miguel. He one day ordered it to be taken down, Mr. Walton says, with the intention of having it kicked about the palace with every mark of indignity. It was not, however, so treated, but it was inverted, and the face turned to the wall, as a thing he could not bear to look upon.

In order to mark his strong approbation of those men who had been faithful to his daughter,

and hostile to his brother, as soon as he heard of the events at Oporto, he conferred on her the title of duchess of that place, to impress upon her mind her inalienable rights, and in memory of the brave city which had dared to maintain them, and this title she was to bear at the court of Vienna. Here her father had now resolved to send her, to visit her mother's relatives, and reside with her grandfather, who was apprised of her intended coming. The Imperatriz frigate was immediately got ready, and on the evening of her departure, he accompanied Dona Maria on board, and remained there all night. Next morning, at day-break, the frigate, joined by the corvette Dona Francisca, weighed, and proceeded out of the harbour. The emperor continued with his daughter beyond the forts, and then returned to Rio in a steam-boat, at that time plying about the bay. His Majesty's ship, the Ganges, accompanied the young queen for several leagues. She was attended by the Marquis of Barbacêna, as chamberlain, and it was their intention to land at Genoa, where her aunt, Maria Louisa, ex-empress of France, and Count Leibzeltern, late ambassador in Russia, proceeded to receive her, and conduct her to Vienna.

On their way they touched at Gibraltar for refreshments. Here they found such information as induced her attendants not to complete their intended voyage, but to proceed to England. It was expected generally that the arrival of a young and interesting girl, under the circumstances in which she was placed, would not fail to excite such a popular feeling in her favour, as would be highly advantageous to her interests. On the 24th of September, 1828, the frigate arrived at Falmouth, where she was received with every mark of respect, and immediately visited by the Marquis Palmella, General Valdez, and other unfortunate gentlemen, who had sacrificed so much in her cause.

It was as yet uncertain, however, whether she would be received as a queen, or merely as Duchess of Oporto; but a royal salute soon announced the character in which the British government were disposed to consider her, and she proceeded to the capital, acknowledged every where as a sovereign. As the first exercise of her royal functions, she appointed the Marquis Palmella her ambassador to the British court; but as this is one of the highest functions of prerogative, and could not be exercised by herself because she was a minor, or by the emperor

of Brazil, because he was no longer king of Portugal, the marquis was not acknowledged. A dispatch was immediately sent off to apprise the emperor of the arrival of the young queen in England, with an assurance that she should be treated with the respect due to her rank and sex, and the regard owed to the sovereign of a friendly and long allied power; but, at the same time, expressing a regret that no communication had been previously made, nor the usual etiquette observed, which always precedes such a measure, as the visit of one sovereign to another.

The Rio papers were filled with the flattering reception the young queen had met with in England, and all the stories, however absurd, were copied as proofs, not only that the people, but the government of England, had espoused her cause. This was confirmed by the arrival of a deputation from the Constitutionalists, which had such an effect that three ships of war were ordered to be got ready; and so anxious was the emperor for their equipment, that he went by torch-light to see a schooner coppered at the arsenal, which was to accompany them. On being, however, assured by the British minister, that England would observe a strict neutrality, he countermanded the orders.

Such was the situation of Brazil on our arrival. A vast country just separated from its parent state, having adopted a new and unusual form of government, in which the elements of democracy were largely mixed up with imperial principles, and the spirit of it every where abroad, and ready to burst out;—the young government, embarrassed by various difficulties, brought on by a petty but ruinous warfare;—the nation just recovered from the terror and alarm of a mutiny among strange troops;—the foreign merchants, particularly the English, pressing in their demands for compensation, for the spoliation of their property by the blockade;—the gold and silver of the country entirely vanished, and no currency but paper, which would not circulate beyond the capital, and large pieces of copper, which bore a discount of forty per cent., and even at that could not always be procured;—the emperor exasperated at the ingratitude of his brother, and the base usurpation of his daughter's kingdom;—all the people in a high state of excitement, lest the extinction of the constitution in Portugal was but a prelude to a similar thing in Brazil;—and prejudice against strangers exceedingly strong and strengthening every day, but particularly against the English, whom, on all questions connected with Portugal,

they considered as their decided enemies, and on those purely Brazilian as not their friends, particularly on the abolition of the slave-trade.

Having thus stated to you the most important events which had happened, from the period when Brazil ceased to be a mere colony, till the time of our arrival in the country, in order that you may the better understand the actual state in which we found it, I shall proceed with incidents as they afterwards occurred.

unday following our arrival, was the baptismal day of the emperor, and one of those festivals observed with great ceremony. Early in the morning, the Brazilian ships of war hoisted their flags and ensigns, and all the stays and yard-arms were covered with them. This example was followed by the English; the French displayed the white flag only; and the Americans took no notice by any demonstration Towards mid-day, a discharge of sky-rockets, and other fire-works, was seen over different parts of the town, and then a general salute of artillery commenced. The Brazilian vessels began; it was returned by the fortresses all round the bay, and taken up by the foreign ships of war. The effect was grand; but I was already sated with such things at Constantinople. In this kind of display, the Brazilians exactly

resemble the Turks: the decoration of their ships with flags, and the continued explosion of artillery, were precisely the same in Rio harbour and on the Bosphorus.

After this display of pomp, I returned to the quiet and simplicity of our English church service, as more according with the feelings which our sabbath excites. The edifice stands on the Rua dos Barbonos, and is distinguished as being the first ever erected in South America. Before it was built, divine service was only performed occasionally on board any king's or merchant's ship, in the bay, of which the English on shore used to avail themselves. But in the year 1810, by one of the articles of the treaty then made by Lord Strangford, with the Brazilian government, it was stipulated, that the British should be permitted to build a church for divine service, provided it was erected, not as a public edifice, but as a private house, and did not use bells to assemble the congregation. This latter stipulation was unnecessary, as the residences of the English were so remote, that no bell could be heard, and so would have been useless. When the article was about to be inserted in the treaty, the pope's nuncio, Lourenço Calepi, archbishop of Nisibis, was at Rio. He was a man of the easiest and most insinuating man-

ners, and seemed so little disposed to take exception to such a thing, that he appeared rather careless of more serious matters. Nevertheless, he made the most strenuous opposition to the measure. He demanded an audience with the king, and represented in the strongest manner, the encouragement such an innovation would give, to the growth of schism in the church. When he could not succeed in inducing Dom John to retract his assent, he then proposed, that if the exercise of Protestantism was thus publicly permitted, the Inquisition should also be established along with it, to watch over the interests of the Catholic religion, and restrain the progress of that heresy among the Brazilians, which this public edifice of the new faith, could not fail to encourage. This tribunal had, for the last half century, fallen into disuse, even in Lisbon, and it never had been introduced into Brazil, nor was it likely the people of the country would submit to it; and this compromise was also rejected.

The bishop of Rio, on the contrary, was a strenuous advocate for the measure. He is not only a tolerant and liberal man, but a man of excellent good sense and knowledge of the world. He advocated the cause, in a characteristic manner, with the prejudiced few who opposed it.

"The English," said he, "have really no religion; but they are a proud and obstinate people. If you oppose them, they will persist, and make it an affair of infinite importance; but if you concede to their wishes, the chapel will be built, and nobody will ever go near it." This argument had its weight, and the Brazilians say he was right; for the event has verified the prediction. All opposition was, therefore, withdrawn, and the treaty was signed in a tolerant and liberal spirit, as creditable to the disposition of the king, as of his American subjects.

In order to meet the expense of such an erection, a duty of one-half per cent. was laid on all British merchandize imported into Brazil, and by a very unequal distribution of the produce, two-thirds were allocated for the consul-general, and one-third only for pious and charitable uses, in which were included the chapel, chaplain, sick poor, and all other similar expenditure. The rapid increase of British commerce was such, that I am informed the percentage yielded ten or twelve thousand pounds per annum, to the consul-general. When a sufficient sum was raised, the chapel was commenced. The place originally fixed on was in the Largo da Lapa, nearly opposite the public

gardens. Here was a large square in front, and a space in the rear, extending nearly to the aqueduct, capable of affording a considerable area round the church, and space for a chaplain's residence. This eligible site, however, was given up for the present contracted, obscure, and inconvenient one. The place chosen was the court-yard of a former religious edifice, belonging to a deceased Catholic bishop, José Joaquin Justiniani, at the entrance of the Rua dos Barbonos. The foundation-stone was laid on the 12th of August, the anniversary of the birth-day of the then Prince Regent of England, and a bottle, containing some English newspapers, with coins of the same date, as is usual, was deposited with it. It was dedicated to St. George, the patron of England, and St. John the Baptist, in compliment to John VI. the worthy sovereign, who had permitted the erection of the first reformed church in South America, since the Dutch had a temporary possession of Pernambuco.

The original plan of the edifice had arched windows. It was submitted to the king, who objected that such windows would not resemble those of a private house. The present plan, with a portico and pediment, was then given in; and it was approved of, though much more

deviating from the original stipulation. The front is that of a small but elegant public building, thrown back from the street to give it effect, and separated from it by an ornamental iron railing and gates. The interior consists of two aisles, one at each side, but none in the middle. The pews have no doors, and are very properly open seats. They and the pulpit are made of veniatica, a native wood, like mahogany, beautifully grained and coloured, and susceptible of a high polish. The body of the chapel has a spacious and elegant appearance, and is capable of containing from six to seven hundred persons.

When the edifice was finished, and ready for divine service, a day was appointed for opening and consecrating it. The chaplain, Mr. Crane, who had for three years before performed service for the English congregation in a private house, while the church was building, now wrote to the bishop of London, to know in what manner he should perform the ceremony of consecration; but the bishop's answer did not arrive till the ceremony was over. The directions sent, however, had been anticipated, and the prayers prescribed used, with a particular one composed for the occasion. A guard of police was ordered to attend, as a matter of precaution against any bigoted or evil-disposed

R. W. ad lit. del. N. Whittock Lithog.

BRITISH CHAPEL.

ROYAL ... SOCIETY

persons who might be inclined to interrupt the service, or disturb a congregation introducing a new religion, to which their prejudices were supposed to be greatly hostile; but no disposition of the kind occurred. On the contrary, the common people conducted themselves with great propriety abroad, and the interior of the church was filled with a numerous assemblage of very respectable Brazilians, who equalled the Protestants, as well in numbers as in reverence for the place, by a serious and devout demeanour.

A short time after, however, an assault was made on the church, of a very disagreeable nature. While the chaplain was officiating one Sunday morning, a shower of stones was poured into the windows, which shattered all the glass; but, fortunately, the blinds interposed and protected the congregation from any injury. An immediate inquiry was made, and it was found, that the outrage proceeded from the house of a Spaniard, who kept a venda near the chapel. His yard was close by one side, and some drunken fellows, who frequented his shop, amused themselves with this attack on the English church. A strong representation was made to the proprietor, who was threatened with the police, and the outrage was never repeated.

The permission of the treaty was recognised and confirmed by the constitutional charter at the revolution, which contains the following passage: — "All other religions (besides the Catholic) are permitted, either in domestic worship, or in particular edifices destined for the purpose, without, however, having any exterior appearance of a temple."* The repetition of this exception is merely a matter of form, to comply with any prejudice which might linger among the people; and though it has not been attended to, the people seem to retain no prejudice on the subject.

I was concerned to find that this chapel was never entirely finished; and at present it exhibits marks not only of neglect, but decay. The portico at the entrance was not leaded, and the rain having penetrated, has rotted the roof, which is continually falling on the heads of the scanty congregation who attend it; the windows, which were broken so long ago by the outrage I mentioned, have not since been repaired; the blinds inside are all stained and soiled; and instead of the neatness and propriety which always distinguish the house of God in

* "Todas as outras religiões serao permittidas com seu culto domestico, ou particular em casas para isso destinadas, sem forma alguma exterior de templo."—*Titulo* I. *Art.* 5.

England, it had an air of dirt and neglect, quite painful to contemplate; and the congregation, as if to confirm the prediction of the bishop of Rio, seemed to take no interest in it when it was built, notwithstanding their zeal to have it established. It is capable of containing six or seven hundred persons, and there is that number of the reformed church at Rio to fill it, yet I never counted more than thirty or forty. I have often reflected with great concern, on this indifference to public worship among our factories abroad, and I refer you to Spon and Wheeler for what they witnessed in the Levant in their day. I have even thought it was one great impediment to the progress of the reformation in Catholic countries. Instead of letting "our light so shine before men," on the sabbath, "that they seeing our good works," might be led to "glorify our Father in heaven" after the same manner; they only consider our separation from their church as an abandonment of all worship, and point out our conduct in proof of it.

There is nothing which more strongly marks the growing feeling of toleration in the world, than this concession among a people, formerly distinguished for their spirit of persecution. It is creditable to the good sense and kindly feelings of the Brazilian Portuguese, and the press

of the country is continually employed in extending it. Among the distinguished native writers, whose works have been printed at Rio, is José da Silva Lisboa, Visconde Cayru. He has published several books on various useful subjects, and in one, the "Escola Brazileira," is a curious instance of crude opinions where liberality and prejudice mingle together like gold and dross, in a state of fusion, in the same crucible; and it is also important as containing the opinions of the well-informed Brazilians on a great national question, before it was carried in England; the worthy author did not seem to know, that the Catholics even then enjoyed the same political privileges in Ireland, which the Protestants do now in Brazil—the elective, but not the representative franchise. He says, "But as the same constitution admits of different sects, it is solely for the indulgence of strangers, in order that no restraint should be laid on the conscience, in the genuine spirit of that toleration which our Saviour has taught us. Happily this indulgence has, by the providence of God, made astonishing progress among nations, distinguished by the diffusion of the light of the Gospel, which is extended not only to one hemisphere, but to the other, spontaneously and prodigiously by a Bible society,

protected by the higher powers of christendom. Even in England, in the chamber of commons, already a law has past to abrogate all intolerant statutes which affect the Catholic, Apostolic, and Roman religion; but the law was not confirmed in the chamber of peers, owing to the malign influence of ——, whom all the world has already seen, to the terror of the wicked, to be called a little while since before the Judge of Eternity."* I pointed out this extraordinary passage to several Brazilians; to the first part they cordially assented, to the second they shook their heads and said nothing.

On Sunday, November 2, I was engaged to dine with a friend, and I ordered a segé, or cabriolet, to be in readiness to convey me to Bota Fogo, about four miles from our house. After a long delay, at length it came, drawn by a mule and a horse. The machine had but two wheels, with a calash to cover over the head, and was driven by a bollero, who was distinguished by leather breeches, with long wide military boots, coming over the knees, short jacket, and a glazed hat. The bolleros are generally mulattoes, and belong to the *genus irritable,* being exceedingly choleric, a feeling perhaps rendered habitual

* Escola Brazileira, Vol. I. p. 46.

by the obstinacy and waywardness of the animals they drive. As it was now past six o'clock, and I had a long way to go through a deep sandy road, I directed the man to hasten, and he set off at a reasonable pace, till he arrived at the bridge of Catéte, which presents a trifling ascent. Here the mule made a dead stand, and neither the entreaties nor threats, nor the more convincing argument of blows, could induce him to make any other movement, than shaking his head and ears. The bollero now ran into an adjoining house, and returned with a pole as large as a bed-post, which he applied to the head of the mule with such force, that he instantly felled him to the ground; the horse followed in the harness, and the shafts falling, I was thrown head foremost into the sand. Unwilling to witness such another scene, or encounter such another fall, I gave up the attempt at reaching Bota Fogo, and, with a useless monition to the bollero against cruelty to animals, I left the group at the bottom of the bridge, and walked back to the city.

It was the eve of All Souls, a festival which is observed in Catholic countries with great solemnity, and I was glad to avail myself of the opportunity of seeing how the Brazilians

conducted it. After looking into various chapels and shrines, lighted up and decorated, in the principal streets, I came to a passage which opened to the sea. The entrance to this was a triumphal arch, illuminated by various lamps, hung round it, which led to an avenue formed by large palm trees, transplanted here for the occasion, on the branches of which lamps were also suspended. At one side was a raised orchestra, where a band of music sat, and at the other a very beautiful little chapel, lined with satin and crimson velvet. In front was an altar of artificial flowers, raised to the ceiling with silver crosses, and other ornaments. A respectable man, seeing I was a stranger, took me in courteously by the hand, and told me, with pride and exultation, that it was the shrine of N. S. da Annunciação.

At the extremity of the alley was a stage, lighted by mutes holding torches. On this stage they were exhibiting a dramatic representation. The characters were Moors with masks, who held in custody two christians. They were very grotesque figures of an old man and woman, in antique European costume. The woman was detained a prisoner, and the old man attempted to gain her liberty, first by entreaties and then by force. This latter was

expressed by a ballet, in which swords were drawn and flourished, and a variety of evolutions practised, which excited much applause among a numerous audience, who filled the avenues. The plot, a man informed me, was founded on some legend connected with King Sebastião, after whom the city of Rio was named, and whose memory they still keep alive by many allusions. This exhibition was perfectly gratuitous — no money was demanded either entering or returning, and the people around me seemed pleased to point out to me the particulars. I left it still going on at eleven o'clock.

The next day was announced in the journals "Commemoracão dos Defuntos," and the whole city were occupied in recalling the memory of their departed friends. The commemoration principally takes place in the great church of Francisco de Paula; and I proceeded there between nine and ten in the morning. This church, called also Caritas, is distinguished all over Brazil, as well for the miracles the image of its patron performs in healing the living, as for its sanctity in preserving the bones of the dead, whom S. Francisco could not save. I entered by a long aisle at the side of the chapel, the walls of which were covered with tablets and pictures, representing sick persons

in bed, and people suffering under various accidents, in all which S. Francisco appears in the back ground, descending from the sky, healing or rescuing the persons. They were all labelled "Milagre que fez S. Francisco de Paula.* One of these exhibited a stone extracted from a man, the size and shape of which were painted on the board. Beside these were waxen legs, arms, heads, breasts, and other parts of the body, stained with blood and discoloured with sores, in a very natural though disgusting manner: but, as anatomical representations of morbid limbs, they were really excellent imitations. A large portrait of the saint himself, depicted him as an old man with a long staff. His only garment was a cloak, through which appeared his naked breast, inscribed with the word "Caritas." Attached to the building are long corridores, on each side of which are apartments for the sick, who are brought here to be healed by the saint's intercession.

From the examination of these *votivæ tabellæ*, I entered the chapel to visit the tombs. It was crowded with people of all ranks dressed in their best clothes, and a continued concourse was passing in and out. At the side altar a priest

* A miracle which St. Francisco de Paula wrought.

was celebrating mass, and on his turning round I perceived he was a negro. He was a tall portly man, and his black visage formed a strong contrast to his snow-white vestments. The floor of the church was filled with women, sitting with their feet drawn under them, on small carpets of varied hues, the greater number of them covered with black veils. This had quite the appearance of oriental usage, and I was informed was adopted from the Moors, who first introduced it into Spain and Portugal. Their attention seemed fixed on some internal object, and they were all moving their lips in silent prayer, recommending the souls of their departed friends to mercy.

Through the dense mass of women on the floor was a narrow passage, along which a continual current of people was flowing. I entered it, and passed with them into a large garden surrounded with cloisters. Here an immense number of cases and boxes, of different shapes and sizes, were ranged against the walls and in the garden, some of them as large as mausoleums, and some not larger than tea-chests. All had locks and keys, and were labelled in front with different inscriptions. On one was "Aqui jazem os ossos de nosso irmão João Marguida dos Neves" On another, "Aqui seccão os ossos."

On another, " Orai por nos irmãos.* These boxes literally contained the bones of the persons indicated by the inscription. The practice is, to immerse the body of the dead in quick lime; and when the flesh is consumed by its causticity, the bones are collected, scraped, and cleaned, and deposited together in a box, with a lock and key, which is then closed and the key delivered to the family. These cases have no resemblance to coffins. They are of different shapes; and with their ornamented exterior, the smaller ones rather resemble a lady's dressing-box. They are deposited in dry receptacles made in the walls of the cloisters, or other parts of the church; and on this annual festival are brought out, and the living friends come with their keys and inspect them.

Against the walls were raised shrines, on which some of these mortuary boxes were laid. They were gaudily ornamented with drapery of gold and silver tissue, worked on satin and velvet, and made a gay and rich display, altogether discordant with the solemnity of the occasion.

The whole exhibition was strongly contrasted with a similar ceremony which I have witnessed

* " Here lie the bones of our brother"—" Here dry the bones"—" Pray for our brothers."

among the Armenians and Irish. These people, on the day of All Souls, assemble at the tombs of their families in the open burying ground, without parade or ornament, and by the help of a strong imagination, seem actually absorbed in holding a visionary communication with the departed. This simple observance with them is affecting and comparatively rational; but the indifference and gaudy display of the ceremony here, was a mere exhibition of the dead, to form an idle pageant for the living.

From the chapel of St. Francisco, I proceeded to visit several others, and I will condense here for you the result of observations which I made at various subsequent periods. The edifice of the Candelaria stands in a street of the same name. It is so called from an important service in the Catholic religion, of consecrating candles for its service, on a festival, still called in England Candlemas-day. This is the largest church in Brazil, but it is erected in a small cross street, which is too narrow to permit a view of the front of the building, when you are in it, and it cannot be seen out of it. It is proposed, however, to throw down the intermediate houses, and build a square, open to the Rua Direita, of which this church will form one side. It presents a

noble façade of hewn granite, ornamented with mouldings and entablatures, and flanked by two high towers. They have rendered it mean, however, by whitewashing, as they have the front of almost every other in Rio. It is not yet finished, though it was commenced fifty years ago, and was intended for the cathedral of the diocese. When I visited it, a number of negroes, just imported, were undergoing the rite of baptism, for which purpose it is the church generally selected.

The church of the Rosario stands in a street of the same name, and had been the cathedral, till the dignity was transferred to the royal chapel. The body of the building is a great cemetery. It was literally floored with corpses; and people have told me, it was impossible at one time to walk up or down, without tripping over heads or toes sticking out of the ground; they were so negligently and superficially laid in the earth. This very revolting and unwholesome state of the church, however, is corrected, and it is one of the many nuisances that have been removed since the revolution. The floor is now flagged over, but the bodies are still deposited beneath.

Among the striking peculiarities of Rio are the churches and monasteries which crown the

hills, inviting the passenger to ascend from the murky street below, to breathe the purer and freer air in which they are situated. The principal of these is the Convent of Sam Bento, or St. Benedict. It is delightfully situated just over the sea, looking down on the Ilha das Cobras, and commanding a magnificent view of the whole city and bay. It was one of the first religious edifices erected in Rio; and it appears, by the inscription over the gate, to have been repaired in 1671, and has all the marks of an early and rude structure. It is exceedingly strong and massive; the lower part, with windows closed by thick iron bars, resembles a gloomy prison; but on ascending a stone staircase, you arrive at a long corridor, terminated at each end by a spacious hall or pavilion, which commands three distinct and lovely views—one over the city, another up the bay, and a third down to the mouth of the harbour. Nothing can exceed the beauty of this prospect, or the cheerful scenes expanded before you, while the ever moving picture of ships and boats, and the busy hum of men below in the city, give an additional interest to the scenic representation of nature. The halls and corridor are lined and ceiled with jacaranda wood, richly carved in high relief, and susceptible of a bright polish;

and they are hung with pictures, by native artists, detailing the different events of the saint's life, whose relics are preserved in the chapel, and are of great reputed sanctity.

One of the pavilions opens into the large library, where there are collected about six thousand volumes, of a very select and valuable character. It is open to the public every day, from nine in the morning till late in the evening, with the exception of the dinner hour, from one till two. I was received with great urbanity by the good ecclesiastics I met here, who readily procured for me the books I required, and among the rest the Ethiopia Resgatada, which I could find no where else, and I was cordially invited to use the books as long as I remained in Rio.

The revenues of the convent are very large, consisting of fazendas, or farms, in the country, but particularly in the Ilha do Governador, the largest island in the bay, which almost wholly belongs to it. A proposal, however, had been made in the chamber of deputies, to alienate this with other conventual property, and it is supposed it will be carried at some future session. In the mean time a regiment of soldiers occupy two wings of the edifice, which they have completely converted into a barrack; and

the brotherhood, with the exception of the principal and the librarian, have retired to the Ilha.

It is said that Dom John, on his first arrival at Rio, proposed to take up his residence here, and convert it into a palace, for which its lovely situation particularly recommended it; but the ecclesiastics at the time preserved it for their own use, by giving out that it had been struck with lightning, and shaken by an earthquake, to which accidents its elevated situation rendered it apparently very liable. Even the hint of such a thing, was sufficient to deter the timid monarch, and he remained in his palace below till he was accommodated at S. Christovão.

At the opposite extremity of the town stands another elevated convent, on a hill looking down on the city, the largest and finest in Rio: this is the convent of S. Antonio. It is approached by a broad flagged way on a steep inclined plain, which leads to an extensive platform, surrounded by a parapet, on which I have often sat to command the fine prospect around; but it is not equal to that of S. Bento. One side of the platform is formed by the façade of the building, which runs to a considerable length. The interior consists of two large chapels, with an extensive cloister below. Round the latter

is a variety of small chapels, dedicated to different saints, and among them, one to the patron, S. Antonio, whose birth and death is represented in statuary. In the chapter-house are deposited the remains of General Forbes, who was of a distinguished Scotch family, of the Catholic persuasion, and was known in Europe as the man who had the encounter with Wilkes, on the subject of the North Briton. He accompanied the royal family in their emigration to Brazil, where he died in May, 1808. In the passage round is a succession of vaults, covered over with boards or flags, with apertures to insert an instrument, to raise them up whenever it is necessary to deposit a body.

Beside the cloister is the refectory. The benches are ranged along the wall, which is glazed with Dutch tiles, giving a remarkably fresh and cleanly look to the hall, and imparting a considerable sense of coolness. From hence a broad staircase leads to the corridor above, which communicates with the apartments of the brotherhood. On the summit is a tiled yard, on one side of which is the conventual library, consisting of three thousand volumes, principally the works of the early fathers of the Greek and Latin churches—St. Chrysostom, St. Jerome, and others. It is not so valuable either

in extent or selection as that of S. Bento, and it is not a subject of regret that it is not open to the public; but I was given to understand I might have access to it. Adjoining the convent is a large hospital. The whole establishment is in the highest order and repair. It is the finest and the most esteemed in Rio; the chapels the most frequented, and the shows and processions the most magnificent; yet it is supported only by public charity.

The brothers are not allowed to hold any property, and this is recognized by a curious document. The Franciscans had originally the chapel on the sea-shore at S. Luzia; but disliking that situation, and falling out with their neighbours the Jesuits, whose convent was beside them, they removed from it; and in 1608, the camera granted them their present situation by a deed of gift, which specified, that the Franciscans having chosen this situation, they were allowed to occupy it; but as they were incapable of holding any property themselves, it was conferred on the pope and the church of Rome. It was in this convent I visited the bishop of Anamuria.

On the hill opposite to that of S. Antonio, stands the convent of Santa Theresa. The Brazilians are, very judiciously, not partial to convents,

R. W. in Lee del.t

T. Kelly Lithog.

VIEW OF THE HILL AND CHURCH OF GLORIA.

Taken from the summit of the Aqueduct.

particularly for females, whose celibacy they consider as highly injurious to the growing prosperity of a country, whose greatest want is population. There are therefore but two convents of nuns in Rio, one of which is this of Santa Theresa, limited to twenty-one sisters, and it cannot admit more than that number. Its situation exceeds in beauty even that of S. Bento; and it is impossible to conceive any better adapted for sublime or serious contemplation. The edifice is not surrounded with walls and paved courts, as those of the others; but its white façade rises from a green sward, on the summit of the hill, encircled by a natural plantation of aromatic and flowering shrubs, from whence it looks down on the rich and varied scenery presented at the entrance of the harbour. As our house was situated near the base of the hill, I climbed it morning and evening, and never without increasing pleasure.

Crowning another hill which projected into the sea, apparently just under Santa Theresa, is the pretty church of N. S. da Gloria. It is an octagon edifice, with a portico and steeple, and highly ornaments the beautiful eminence on which it stands. Here it was that the empress paid her homage to propitiate a favourable accouchment; here she devoted her first-born

to her patroness; and here the emperor is seen every Saturday, kneeling at the foot of the altar.

Opposite the Gloria, on a high promontory rising abruptly from the middle of the bay, is the church of Boa Viagem. This is distinguished for being as propitious to mariners, as the Gloria to mothers. They come here to make their vows on going to sea. Their vows consist in consecrating their equipage to the church, if they return safe. Here may be seen sails, cables, anchors, and other tackle, suspended round the walls, as the votivæ tabellæ of those who have made a prosperous voyage, under the protection of this patron. As the good fathers could not use these things themselves, they sold them to those that would; and, as there was a certain degree of sanctity annexed to them, and they evinced a striking proof of supernatural interference in favour of those who had used them, by their safe return, they were in great request, and brought higher prices than ordinary tackle. A circumstance, however, happened, some years before, which considerably weakened the faith of the people in such things. A boat, loaded with some property of this kind, belonging to the convent, and in which it was supposed its patron took a particular interest,

was upset in a squall, on her way to Rio, and every person on board perished. This misfortune was at first attributed to some misconduct of the clergy of the church, which offended its patron; but as no such thing was known or acknowledged, the votaries began to suspect, if he could not protect his own, he would not protect them; their confidence in the efficacy of vows at this place was greatly shaken, and it is not so much frequented now as formerly. The practice, however, is recommended by the high authority of Columbus, who, on his return from his first voyage to the new world, went to the next shrine he found after his landing, to make his votive offerings.

Besides these churches and convents, there are others distinguished in various ways. That of St. Domingo is allocated to the blacks, who form a society for its support, and its ministers are negroes. That of Santa Rita is called the malefactor's chapel: here condemned criminals stop, on their way to execution, and receive the last rites and consolations of their religion; they remain in front of the church till the elevation of the host, and then pass on to their final doom.

The great convent of the Ajuda, receives an unlimited number of nuns, though they are

generally confined to twenty-eight, and is one of the largest edifices in Rio. It runs the whole length of a street, and is so divested of ornament, that it looks like a huge barn or prison; yet it is but half built. It has one front to the sea, and another to the street, and contains two rows of dormitories. Under and against the high wall, next the sea, is erected the police barracks, and, by rather an odd coincidence, the sisterhood sleep on one side of the wall, and a regiment of profligate soldiers on the other. The chapel is immensely large, and very sombre and gloomy, the greatest and the most unadorned religious edifice in Rio. The end opposite the altar is formed by a screen of iron railings, with very thick bars, and narrow apertures extending from the floor to the ceiling, behind which the nuns assemble during divine service.

At the end of the chapel is a large quadrangle, entered by a massive gateway, surrounded by three stories of grated windows. Here female negro hawkers and pedlars come with their goods, and expose them in the court-yard below. The nuns, from their grated windows above, see what they like, and, letting down a cord, the article is fastened to it; it is then drawn up and examined, and,

if approved of, the price is let down. Some that I saw in the act of buying and selling in this way, were very merry, joking and laughing with the blacks below, and did not seem at all indisposed to do the same with my companion. In three of the lower windows, on a level with the court-yard, are revolving cupboards, like half-barrels, and at the back of each is a plate of tin, perforated like the top of a nutmeg-grater. The nuns of this convent are celebrated for making doces, or sweet confectionary, which people purchase. There is a bell which the purchaser applies to, and a nun peeps through the perforated tin; she then lays the dish on a shelf of the revolving cupboard, and turns it inside out; the dish is taken, the price laid in its place, and it is turned in. While we stood there, the invisible lady-warder asked for a pinch of snuff; the box was laid down in the same way, and turned in and out.

This convent is distinguished as the burying-place of the royal family. The ashes of Dona Maria I., and those of her sister Miriam, are deposited here, and here also repose the remains of the good and amiable Leopoldina.

There are so few of the sisterhood in Rio, and their calm and temperate lives, in a mild and

salubrious climate, are such causes of health, that they survive to a very advanced age, and a vacancy rarely occurs for a new sister; professing a nun, therefore, is a rare occurrence here. An event, however, of this kind now took place; I was careful to be present at it, and I went on the Sunday appointed, with a friend.

The street in which the convent is situated, was filled with blacks and mulattos, who, as is usual in all religious festivals, were exploding fire-works before the door. The large church was crowded to excess, but the middle of the aisle was kept open by two files of soldiers, extending from the grating to the chancel. Beside the grating, a temporary gallery was erected for a choir of singers and musicians, as they have no organ in the chapel, and into this we were courteously admitted. The curtain which usually hangs inside the grating, was withdrawn, and the interior was displayed. It was a large apartment, corresponding with the chapel, and here the sisterhood were seated, with their veils thrown on one side, so that their faces were visible. Their dress consisted of a long black garment, commencing with a peak projecting below the eyes down the forehead, pinned close to the ears, and falling

to the feet: under it was folded the white veil. The abbadessa, who sat in front, was a full, fair, comely woman, with a star on her breast, and a large golden cross hanging to a rosary.

In the grating was a small wicket, about eighteen inches square. It was now open, and a cushion and some handkerchiefs of embroidered muslin were laid on the lower bars; and before it, on the outside, was a low throne, or stool, with four large gilt balls at the corners, and a cushion between them. When the usual mass of the day was ended, the officiating priests retired from the altar, and the nuns from their apartments, and then the peculiar ceremony commenced.

The young lady about to be professed was the daughter of one of the rich proprietarios d'Engenho, or owners of a sugar plantation, who are generally the most opulent people in the country.* Her name war Maria Luzia, aged

* She was also distinguished in other respects by her connexions. Her aunt was the celebrated Maria Bangu, who made a noise as the richest heiress in Brazil, and had as many suitors as Miss Tilney Long. She rejected them all, and formed an attachment for her own feitor, or steward, with whom she lived unmarried till her death, and then left him all her property. He became a great favourite of the emperor, and was created Visconde de Gericino, from his estate which joined Santa Cruz. His brother, Philisberto Caldos, was one of those sent with the young queen, and visited England with her.

twenty-two. She resolved to take the veil entirely against the wishes of her friends, who were anxious to establish her respectably in life, in a rank to which her expectations entitled her; but she resisted the attractions, and voluntarily renounced the world in the prime of youth, and possessed of considerable beauty and fortune. This propensity in Brazil is not at all uncommon. In the convent of the Ajuda, were two sisters of the same family, already professed, and two more as novices, immediately to take the veil.

This young person had been previously examined by the bishop; whether she had completed her twenty-fifth year, for then she would have been of a competent age to decide for herself, without the intervention of friends; whether it was with her own free consent that she proposed to renounce the world; and whether she designed rigidly to observe her vows, and preserve her chastity. Having answered all these things in the affirmative, certain of the sisterhood, and of her own relations, were appointed as her sponsors, to accompany her during her profession.

The novice professes in two ways; either behind the grating, or by advancing up the church to the altar. The former mode is the

rule of this convent. The archpresbyter appeared with the bishop, attended by other clergy, at the altar; and at the same time the nuns entered their apartment below the grating. The archpresbyter then advancing down the aisle to the grating, applied himself to the wicket, and said, "Prudent virgin, trim your lamp: behold your Spouse approaches; come forth and meet him." The novice hearing the words of the archpresbyter, lighted a torch which she held in her hand, and, accompanied by two nuns already professed, advanced to the wicket, while the bishop in his robes at the same time approached from the altar, with his mitre and crozier, and sat on the low throne placed before it. The archpresbyter then said: "Most reverend father, our holy mother, the Church, demands that you should bless this virgin, and espouse her to our Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of God." The bishop demanded, "Is she worthy?" the archpresbyter replied, "As far as human frailty permits me to know, I believe, and certify, that she is worthy." The bishop then turned to the congregation, and said with a loud voice, "God and our Saviour aiding, we have chosen this present virgin, to bless and consecrate her as the spouse of Christ." The archpresbyter now chanted *Veni*—"Come," and the

virgin advanced to him singing, "and now I follow with my whole heart:" she then came forward between her sponsors, and knelt at the aperture before the bishop.

She seemed very lovely; with an unusually sweet, gentle, and pensive countenance. She did not look particularly, or deeply affected; but when she sung her response, there was something exceedingly mournful in the soft, tremulous, and timid tones of her voice. The bishop now exhorted her to make a public profession of her vows before the congregation, and said, "Will you persevere in your purpose of holy chastity?" She blushed deeply; and with a downcast look, lowly, but firmly answered, "I will." He again said, more distinctly, "Do you promise to preserve it?" and she replied more emphatically, "I do promise." The bishop said, "Thanks be to God:" and she bent forward and reverently kissed his hand, while he asked her, "Will you now be blessed and consecrated?" she replied, "Oh! I wish it."

The habiliments in which she was hereafter to be clothed, were brought forward, and were sanctified by the aspersion of holy water: then followed several prayers to God, that, "As he had blessed the garments of Aaron, with

ointment which flowed from his head to his beard, so he would now bless the garment of his servant, with the copious dew of his benediction." When the garment was thus aspersed and blessed, the girl retired with it; and having laid aside the dress in which she had appeared, she retur[illegible], arrayed in her new attire, except her veil. [illegible] gold ring was next provided, and consecrat[illegible] with a prayer, that she who wore it "migh[illegible] be fortified with celestial virtue, to preserve [illegible] pure faith, and incorrupt fidelity to her spouse, Jesus Christ." He last took the veil, and her female attendants having uncovered her head, he threw it over her, so that it fell on her shoulders and bosom, and said, "Receive this sacred veil, under the shadow of which you may learn to despise the world, and submit yourself truly, and with all humility of heart, to your spouse:" to which she sung a response, in a very sweet, soft, and touching voice: "He has placed this veil before my face, that I should see no lover but himself."

The bishop now kindly took her hand, and held it while the following hymn was chaunted by the choir with great harmony:—"Beloved Spouse, come—the winter is passed—the turtle sings, and the blooming vines are redolent of summer."

A crown, a necklace, and other female ornaments, were now taken by the bishop and separately blessed; and the girl bending forward, he placed them on her head and neck, praying that she might be thought worthy "to be enrolled into the society of the hundred and forty-four thousand virgins, who preserved their chastity, and did not mix with the society of impure women."

Last of all he placed the ring on the middle finger of her right hand, and solemnly said, "So I marry you to Jesus Christ, who will henceforth be your protector. Receive this ring, the pledge of your faith, that you may be called the spouse of God." She fell on her knees, and sung, "I am married to him whom angels serve, whose beauty the sun and moon admire:" then rising, and showing with exultation her right hand, she said, emphatically, as if to impress it on the attention of the congregation, "My Lord has wedded me with this ring, and decorated me with a crown as his spouse. I here renounce and despise all earthly ornaments for his sake, whom alone I see, whom alone I love, in whom alone I trust, and to whom alone I give all my affections. My heart hath uttered a good word: I speak of the deed I have done for my King."

Having thus renounced all earthly attachments, and laid aside all human objects of affection, she stood before the congregation dressed in her wedding robes, the garb of her celestial Spouse. The bishop then pronounced a general benediction, and retired up to the altar; while the nun professed was borne off between her friends, with tapers lighting, and garlands waving. The curtain was then drawn, and the ceremony ended.

I thought this whole service exceedingly affecting and beautiful; and it left a strong impression on my mind, notwithstanding the many circumstances attendant on it, which weakened the character of its solemnity. Outside was a crowd of blacks and mulattos, shouting, laughing, and hallooing, during the whole service; and discharging squibs and crackers, which were distinctly seen and heard by the congregation. Nor did the people inside regard it as a thing of any interest; but on this, as on other occasions of ceremonial observances, the Brazilians seemed to have lost all impression of sanctity. Those about us laughed and joked on it, with an unbecoming levity; and I believe my companion and I, were the only persons in the gallery, who seemed to feel any respect for the time or the place. One of them openly condemned the thing

as a usage that must be abolished. "I am in a country," said he, "where our greatest want is people; it is absurd, as it is unjust, to shut up a number of females from the intercourse of social life, who would make the best wives and mothers; and so not only counteract the great law of Providence, 'increase and multiply,' but compel the people, in order to fulfil it, to cohabit with their nearest relations."

Besides the convent of the Ajuda and Theresa, there are two Recolhementos, or retirements for females: one where husbands place their wives, of whose conduct they have reason to be dissatisfied; the other for female orphans till they meet with suitable matches, or are placed out in eligible situations; and a certain number of them are portioned every year. On a particular day, the visitation of S. Elizabeth, they are allowed to receive visits, when young tradesmen and others in humble life attend, and select a wife for themselves. They must, however, produce respectable attestations as to their moral character, and their abilities to support them, and then they receive a portion of five hundred milreis.

When Brazil was first colonized, the ecclesiastic establishments were supported, as in the mother country, by tithes; but from the scan-

tiness of the population, and the small quantity of produce raised in an infant colony, the tithes were found entirely inadequate to support a church, the number of whose ecclesiastics bore a large proportion to the inhabitants. An agreement, therefore, was entered into between the court of Portugal and that of Rome, which gave the whole of the tithe to government, on the condition of their paying the clergy. Instead, therefore, of the laity giving a tenth of the produce of the soil, to support the church, they paid it in for the support of the state, and government allowed the ecclesiastic who was entitled to receive it, a regular stipend of two hundred milreis or dollars, at that time equivalent coin. This at the time was an excellent bargain for the church; the stipend was a very ample one, and the government lost considerably by the exchange, while the parochial clergyman, who received besides his fees for baptisms, burials, marriages, Easter dues, and daily masses, lived in considerable comfort, and even opulence. But now the order of things is reversed. From the increase of population and produce, the tithes amount to an enormous sum, while the stationary stipend of two hundred dollars is a comparative trifle, and insufficient to procure the common comforts of life,

so that the state of the clergy in Brazil is, generally speaking, a state of poverty.

The episcopal establishment consists of one archbishop, six bishops, and two prelates, who are bishops *in partibus*. Nor are these dignitaries of the church more amply provided for. The bishops, who are all suffragans of the archbishop of Bahia, the primate, are also paid by government on the same economical plan; and were it not for the fees, arising from the ecclesiastical tribunals in their respective dioceses, they would find it difficult to support, with decency, the dignity of their station. Such of them as I had the pleasure to know and visit, appeared to me to live with great moderation and simplicity; and, so far from abounding in superfluities, did not seem to me to enjoy even what, in England, would be considered necessaries to men of their rank in life.

The regular clergy in Brazil are not numerous. They are Benedictines, Carmelites, Franciscans, ancient and reformed, with Capuchin missionaries. Of these orders the richest are the Benedictines and the ancient Carmelites. The others make vows of poverty, and neither do nor can possess any property.

But the wealthy orders are just now in imminent danger; from the very reputation of

their wealth, the present feeling of the country is not in their favour, and they seem to be held in the same estimation, as they were in France, at the commencement of the revolution. It is therefore generally spoken of, as a thing just and necessary, that their property should be applied to the necessities of the state. The chamber of deputies have already passed a vote to that effect, and it is imagined, that many persons about the throne are equally disposed to the measure, in the hope of annexing some of the confiscated lands to their own estates, as is notoriously the case in every reformation, particularly in our own. The people of Brazil have always been hostile to monastic institutions in the country, either male or female, and for the same reason—the impediment it throws in the way of population; and this feeling extends even to the secular clergy. On the 24th of October, 1827, Senhor Fiego, a member of the ecclesiastical committee, and himself a priest, I believe, moved in the chamber "that it would be proper to apply to the pope, to relieve the clergy from the penalty annexed to marrying," and at the same time to notify to his holiness "that the assembly could not avoid repealing the law of celibacy." The motion did not then pass, but it is expected to be brought

on again with success. In the mean time the regular clergy, the Benedictines and Carmelites, have been prohibited from taking novices, an interdict which is believed to be preparatory to their total extinction.

It is supposed, however, that their loss, at least for a time, will be very severely felt, not only by the poor, but by many respectable families of decent appearance, but very scanty income. The whole mendicity of Rio is supported at their convents. A beggar is rarely or ever seen in the streets; and at first I supposed no such class of persons existed in the country, till I saw the steps and platform of the convent of S. Antonio, crowded with the lame, the halt, and the blind, and all receiving their daily portions of meat and soup. With respect to persons of a better class, great numbers are tenants to these convents, who with considerate humanity take very low rents, and exact them with great indulgence and forbearance. The Benedictines alone are proprietors of seven hundred houses in Rio. They are, I am told, exceedingly kind landlords to their tenants, who are generally of the humble, but respectable class I have mentioned.

The minister of the interior, Clemente Pereira, is supposed to be most hostile to the

regular orders, and avails himself of every opportunity of attacking them. An epidemic disorder broke out at Macacou, on the low grounds at the head of the bay, and application was made for a clergyman to visit the sick. A Fra José promised to go, but did not, and à Fra Luzio positively refused; by which the sick were cruelly neglected and disappointed. A complaint was made to the minister, and his majesty directed, that the superior should strictly enforce the statutes of their orders against these refractory regulars; for that it would still more increase the public dislike to cloisters, if seculars exposed their lives to dangers, which clergymen refused to encounter. Another instance occurred at the same time. The Capuchins have no convent, but a small hospicio in the Rua dos Barbonos, distinguished by a cross of Jerusalem on the door. There was here but one brother, who is prefect of the order, and he thought it right to stay and take care of the hospicio. He was, however, instantly ordered off by Clemente Pereira, to his aldéa, that is, his Indian village in the interior, which the Capuchin missionaries undertake to superintend. An Italian ecclesiastic was charged at the same time with neglect of duty. He was treated with very little ceremony, but directed immediately to

leave the country. From these examples, however, it should appear, that the minister is rather a friend to the character of the church, than an enemy to its clergy.

Besides these regular societies, there are various *irmandades*, or brotherhoods, which seem to be on the plan of our benefit societies, but on a more extended scale. They take the name of Carmelites, Franciscans, Minims, and are called "Third Orders," though they consist entirely of the laity, and are composed of tradespeople, and such of a higher class as may be disposed, from a spirit of devotion, to become members. About fifteen dollars are paid at entrance, and an annual contribution of one dollar to the general fund. For this, every member is entitled to support in sickness or in poverty, and to a funeral free of expense, and other advantages conferred by our societies. But besides this, a considerable part of the expense of public worship is borne by them. These irmandades, under one denomination or another, build and repair churches, pay for masses for the souls of the departed, found hospitals for the sick, bury the dead, and indeed, I am told, it is quite inconceivable to an Englishman, what immense sums of money these lay-brothers annually expend, in what they conceive to be pious and

charitable uses. The large edifice of S. Francisco de Paula, with its magnificent church and fine hospital, was built and is supported by their voluntary contributions; and their utility is so felt and acknowledged, that many people at their death bequeath them their property for the same uses, and in this way they also are proprietors of many houses in Rio, and distinguished for their kindness and indulgence to their tenants.

The native clergy are not, generally speaking, learned men, for they have not the means of being so. The poverty of the bishops, is an impediment to the establishment of ecclesiastical seminaries, on a scale sufficiently extensive or liberal, to give the candidates the means or opportunities of a learned education. The inducements to enter the church also are so small, and its stipend so limited, that men of opulent families or brilliant abilities, always prefer some more attractive or profitable avocation; and none but persons in the lowest ranks of life devote their children to it: the resources which it affords in other countries, to the younger members of respectable families, not being thought of in this. The candidate, therefore, is a person whose parents are unacquainted with liberal education, who has no knowledge

of, nor desire for it himself, and who, even if he had, does not find the means of acquiring it, in the seminary to which he is sent.

To this cause perhaps may be attributed, in some measure, the admission of negroes to holy orders, who officiate in churches indiscriminately with whites. I have seen myself three clergymen in the same church at the same time; one of whom was a white, another a mulatto, and the third a black. The admission of the poor despised race, to the highest function that a human being can perform, strongly marks the consideration in which it is held in different places. In the West Indies a clergyman has been severely censured by his flock, for presuming to administer the sacrament to a poor negro at the same table with themselves.* In Brazil a black is seen as the officiating minister, and whites receiving it from his hands.

Notwithstanding the humble ranks from

* In the island of Barbados, the white inhabitants were quite indignant that the clergyman, Mr. Hoste, should administer the Sacrament to the blacks, at the same table with them; and a complaint was made to the bishop. It appeared, that a few of these poor creatures were admitted to one end of the table, as a matter rather of necessity than choice, before the whites at the other end, had entirely retired from the solemn service; but that a sufficiently respectful distance had been kept between them. The bishop, much to his credit, rebuked their ill-timed vanity on such an occasion, by dismissing the complaint.

which the clergy are raised, and the insufficient means of education afforded them, they have already felt the effects of that influx of light and knowledge, which an intercourse with strangers and free institutions, has spread through the country. A translation of "Paley's Moral Philosophy" is now very generally read by the Brazilian Ecclesiastics, and found in all the libraries, and Blair's Sermons are commonly preached in their churches, the florid style of which is accommodated to their taste in pulpit oratory. Now assuredly the people who would study the one, and address their congregations in the other, must be far advanced beyond those legendary fables, to which it has been supposed their erudition was exclusively confined.

Among the many exceptions I have met with to the charge of want of learning or information among the Brazilian clergy is the excellent José Caëtano da Silva-Coutinho, Bishop of Rio, than whom a more learned or, I believe, a more amiable man does not exist. He is by birth a Portuguese, and intended to have embarked with the royal family, but could not obtain a passage in any ship of the crowded squadron. He was watched by the French, but contrived to elude their vigilance, and arrived

at Rio in April, 1808. He landed at night, and immediately proceeded to the palace, where he was kindly and gladly received by the Prince Regent, who highly esteemed him, and by the clergy of Rio, who had been for three years without a bishop. In June following, by an alvará of the prince, he was appointed capellão mōr, or chaplain-in-chief to the royal palace. He is now about fifty, or a little more. He is well versed in ancient and modern languages; speaks French and English, not fluently, but reads them both with facility, and is well acquainted with the literature of both countries.

He is not only capellão mōr, to the court; but his talents and integrity are so appreciated, that he was recently appointed president of the senate in the present sessions. He is a man of very liberal opinions, perfectly and sincerely tolerant of every sect, while he is warmly attached to his own. He was a strenuous advocate for building the Protestant church, and is fond of the society of English clergymen, and pays particular attention to the British chaplain. He is exceedingly charitable to the poor, even beyond his limited means, and anxious to promote every project which he thinks will benefit the country. He is a man of strict observance and blameless life himself, and

exceedingly temperate in his habits. He fasts all the year on one meal a day. He is anxious to effect a reformation among such of his clergy, as he thinks require it: but unfortunately for the cause of morality and religion, the court party has been for some years in open hostility with him; and some clergymen, whom he would have compelled to live more according to their canonical rules, have been so protected, that he has not been able to effect his purpose.

From the character I had heard of this worthy man, I wished much to know him, and was soon gratified, for he is exceedingly easy of access. He invited me to dine with him at two o'clock, and I went with a friend. His palace is on one of the commanding hills of the town, forming, like the churches and convents, a very conspicuous object, and presenting a magnificent prospect from the platform before the door. The edifice is very spacious, abounding in stairs and corridors, but in a state of neglect, like a great mansion-house, too large to be kept in repair by the limited means of the proprietor. We found him sitting in a very bare apartment, with papers before him; he was a low man, with hair partly grey, and combed negligently over his forehead. His dress was a very plain blue cotton gown, and he

had nothing to distinguish his rank, but a diamond cross suspended from a rosary.

When dinner was announced, he took me by the hand, and placed me in his own chair at the head of the table, and with a courtesy that really embarrassed me, sat down on a low chair beside me. His family consisted of six persons, four of whom were ecclesiastics; one a secretary and member of the chamber of deputies; and one a promising young Brazilian artist, whom he patronises for his merit, and sends to the academy. There was no form or ceremony at table, nor any restraint on the conversation of the young men, except that instinctive deference all pay, to the presence of a venerable man. It happened to be Friday—our dinner was, of course, fasting fare of various sorts, plainly dressed, but plentiful and good; first, Newfoundland salt, and Rio fresh fish, of different kinds, all helped together on the same plate; then small fish stewed with herbs; and the entertainment concluded with a copious dish of fried eggs. When these were removed, a large pan of quince marmalade was set down, which was cut into square blocks and sent round. The bishop informed me that the quince was an imported fruit; it is now one of the most abundant in every part of Brazil, where it attains to a pro-

digious size. During dinner a black came round with wine, and frequently filled our glasses, and every time we drank, we pledged each other's health. In return for mine, I wished prosperity to Brazil, and then apologized for taking what might be supposed a liberty. They all declared, they were exceedingly obliged and complimented by the toast.

After sitting a short time at table, the bishop proposed that we should retire to the library, and take our coffee there. We all stood up, and after his example remained some short time in silent prayer and thankfulness; he then led the way to the library, when he again placed me in his own seat, covered with red morocco—a courtesy I found he always used to strangers.

The library is a fine spacious apartment, containing about four thousand volumes in different languages, ancient and modern, with a large proportion of French and English. Among the latter he showed me "Southey's History of Brazil," which he said was a standard work, highly prized as one of great research and impartial detail; in the compilation of which, he knew the author had access to the most authentic documents through his uncle, the respectable chaplain at Lisbon. Indeed, in such repute was the work held in Brazil, that he said

a native author, I think Pizarro, or Cazal, compiled his history in the bishop's library, principally out of Southey's work. It was certainly a high compliment to the estimation in which a foreigner's work was held, when a native drew all his information from it about his own country.

I was so pleased with the conversation of this urbane and intelligent man, that I quite forgot I was infringing on his habits, of which I had been previously apprised. Having passed the morning in his various duties, and dined frugally at two, he immediately after retires to his couch, where he continues some hours; then rises and studies all night, till the morning calls him again to his episcopal and other duties. I was sorry to find, I had intruded two or three hours upon his natural rest.

The bishop, though a decided constitutionalist, has never exceeded the bounds of moderation, or countenanced the wild and anarchical projects of those, who have at different times endeavoured to disturb the repose of Brazil. He is therefore disliked by the violent, and not in favour with the court; and he has at times been attacked by the scribes of both parties. He still, however, holds on the even tenour of his way, and as he is known to be a disinterested

man, sincerely attached to the good of his country, he is respected by all, and the weight of his moral character has considerable influence. After a long estrangement from court, he was sent for, and again treated with an almost superfluity of respect and distinction. The rumour of a certain marriage was, at that time, circulating at Rio, and it was added that he, as capellão mor, or first chaplain, was called on to perform it. Happily, the rumour was unfounded; but while it continued, I am told it made the good man exceedingly unhappy.

The bishoprick of Rio, over which he presides, contains four provinces: Rio de Janeiro, Santo Espiritu, S. Catherina, and Rio Grande do Sul. The population of the whole amounts to eight hundred thousand persons, including about one thousand clergymen. Of these, very few are regular, as there are but ten convents in the diocese, and one of them contains but a single brother. Many of the clergy are old, and are every day leaving vacancies by deaths; yet by a recent law, which seems dictated by a very unchristian spirit, no young candidate can take orders, without a license from government; and, as this is not readily granted, many villages of the interior are already without a pastor.

From what you have heard of the immoral

lives of the clergy in Brazil, you will say that this is no great loss to the people; but really I cannot find that they deserve the character imputed to them. From what I have seen myself and heard from others, they are, generally speaking, temperate in their diet; observant of the rules of their church; assiduous in attending the sick, and charitable as far as their limited means permit them. There is one serious charge, however, of which I cannot acquit them; and that is, the too frequent violation of the vows of celibacy. Their attachments, however, are constant, and want only legal sanction to render them even laudable; for they consider their connexion as binding, as if it had taken place. Many of them are excellent fazendeiros, or farmers, and leave behind them a family in the midst of the wilderness, to extend the improvements they have commenced; and this is deemed in the country so important a benefit, that the thing is not regarded with the same degree of scandal as it ought, or as it is in other places. The Brazilians are all anxious to have the rule of celibacy, which they say is a mere matter of regulation, and not of doctrine, immediately repealed, and the discipline of their church adapted to the state of the country.

In this view, also, it is probable that the

number of holydays will also be diminished, in imitation of what has taken place in Peru. The Archbishop of Lima has retained only twelve, asserting on the promulgation of the edict, that every day in the year ought to be kept a holy day, as to avoiding wicked deeds and practising virtue. This regulation, and the sentiment accompanying it, I have heard greatly applauded in Brazil.

Among the saints whose holydays are prescribed in the Brazilian Calendar are St. Patrick and St. George. The first, as S. Patricio Ab. de Irlanda, on the 17th of March, as in Ireland; so that Dr. Ledwich's proof of the non-existence of this saint, has not convinced the Brazilians. The other is celebrated on the 23d of April: he has also a church dedicated to him in the Travessa dos Passos. He is held in such respect, that his image on horseback is the only one permitted, in the public procession of Corpus Christi day.

But the day of S. Sebastião, the great patron of Rio, is that particularly held in the highest respect. Before the foundation of this city, he was the saint under whose banners they fought with the Indians, and expelled the heretic French; and it was after him their city was called, though the name is now lost

in that of Rio. His day is celebrated with great pomp on the 20th of January. It had been the custom to illuminate the city, for three nights in succession after his festival, and for the senate of the camera to carry his image, crowned with a diadem of precious stones, after the direction of the psalm* which they applied to him. This practice had fallen into disuse; but a sudden epidemic, like a plague, at Rio, greatly alarmed the people, who could assign no cause for the visitation, but the discontinuance of the procession of their patron; it was therefore revived with additional splendour, and ordered to be regularly observed. Notice had arrived at Rio by the brig Guerra Voador, that the royal family was embarked, and might be expected in Brazil about the 20th of January. This coincidence was hailed as a good omen, and the camera, in this expectation, ordered the ceremony to be got up with unusual brilliancy; but D. John not arriving during the festival, they were filled with melancholy forebodings. In 1809, among the first acts of the king, on his coming to Rio, was the observance of this festival with great pomp on its first anniversary, and it has so continued ever since.

* "Posuisti in capite ejus coronam de lapide precioso." Ps. xxi. 3.

The eve of a saint's festival is always announced at twelve o'clock the day before, by a discharge of three sky-rockets, in front of the church. These rockets are filled with crackers, which explode high in the air, and then descend in showers of white smoke, on the roof of the building. Besides this, every church has a novena, or festival of nine days, during which there is a constant discharge of rockets and other fire-works; so that the whole year is an uninterrupted succession of those explosions, in some part of the town. I rarely went out into any street, or at any hour in the day or evening, that I did not hear some report crackling over my head, and on looking up saw expulsions of white smoke, like small dense clouds, floating in the air while it was light, and when it was dark, showers of brilliant stars descending from the atmosphere.

Another circumstance which marks the saint's festival, is the vast quantity of candles lighted before the shrine, mixed with artificial flowers and other decorations. This particular mode of ornamenting their church, is one on which the greatest care and attention is bestowed, and sometimes with fine effect. An inclined plane of lighted tapers, commences at the floor and ascends to the roof, forming

sloping walls of light, besides those that are suspended from the ceiling; so that on entering the church, you find yourself encircled in a sheet of blaze. These tapers are all of wax, generally imported from the coast of Africa expressly for this use.

As this constant display of fire-works and wax candles, must add considerably to the expense of public worship, and abstract large sums from really useful objects, I wished to ascertain what it amounted to in the year, by finding out the quantity of wax and powder annually consumed. I could get no data, however, to enable me to form a correct opinion; but a friend undertook to make a calculation, from the consumption of single churches. In that of Antonio we counted on one night, eight hundred and thirty large wax tapers, and in that of the Terceira on the same night seven hundred and sixty, and some of these as large as flambeaux. Wax cost at the time five hundred and sixty reys per pound, and we conjectured that in the forty-two chapels, convents, igrejas, and other religious houses in Rio, there was annually expended one hundred contos of reis, or about fifteen thousand pounds sterling, in wax and gunpowder, as essential requisites to the worship of God. I trust the

worthy irmandades, who supply a considerable part of the expenses, will at length see, that it might be more profitably and rationally employed, and will apply it to promote some of the benevolent and useful plans, for which the public are really so much indebted to them.

The observance of Sunday, however, dedicated only to God, does not require in their estimation, any of that display, which marks their devotion for inferior beings. The sabbath, therefore, is a day of rational piety, and it is observed by some Brazilian families, with great propriety and decorum. I have never seen a more pleasing or edifying sight, than one of these families going to church on Sunday morning: first the father and mother, dressed with that attention which respect for the day dictated; then their children of different ages, attired with equal care, having each their prayer-book or breviary in their hand; last followed the domestic slaves, male and female, dressed with similar neatness, particularly the female negroes. I have sometimes counted groups of twelve or fourteen persons of this description, proceeding to their parish churches, and I believe there is no Brazilian family, which does not think worship on that day indispensably requisite, either public or domestic. I

had more than once occasion to call at their houses, about nine o'clock on Sunday morning, and I always found them engaged in private devotion; this was the case twice at the residence of the minister of the interior. He and all his family, and several of the neighbours, formed a large and serious congregation; and it appeared to me that the imputation of his indifference to religion, was very unfounded.

It is true, that after having attended divine service in the morning, many shops are opened, and artisans are frequently seen following their ordinary trade; and this to one accustomed to our rigid restrictions on the sabbath, is really a painful sight, as breaking down the partition, which should separate this prescribed period of rest, from ordinary days; but then you are not shocked by that awful display of drunkenness and blasphemy, which our sabbaths present;—you do not see squalid masses of men and women, besetting gin-shops, and resting from their ordinary labours, only to indulge in the excesses of intoxication. The Brazilians consider that the sabbath commences on Saturday evening after sunset, and terminates at the same time the following day, founding their opinion on the expression that "the evening and the morning were the first day;" and this they

allege as a justification, for opening the opera after sun-set on Sunday evening. We very properly close our theatres, but we open our taverns and what are miscalled tea-gardens, where about one hundred thousand persons in London and the vicinity, commit more riot and excess on the sabbath-day, than are found in the whole extent of Brazil in a year. I mention this to you to remind you, that all our own usages are not the perfection of human wisdom, as we are apt to consider them; nor ought we to despise, as we do, those who deviate from them. The greatest violations of the Lord's-day which I have seen at Rio, were committed at the Palace-square, where the crews land from ships in the bay. Here I witnessed one Sunday evening a desperate riot of drunken blasphemers; but I am sorry to inform you, they all swore in English, and were subjects either of the United States or the United Kingdom.

It appears to me that the Brazilians are losing much of their respect for saints' days and ceremonial processions, but that they still retain a deep impression of rational piety; and while they are attached to the essential parts of their own doctrines and discipline, are almost entirely free from bigotry and intolerance towards those who differ from them. I have

heard some of the clergy complain, that infidel opinions were making a rapid progress among them, and so perhaps they are among a very small class of anarchists, such as are to be found in all revolutionary times; but as far as I have seen, the great body of the people are zealously attached to their religion, and are every day beginning to entertain more rational and enlightened views on the subject.

There is one sect, however, that still lingers among them of very extraordinary character, that of the Sebastianists, so called from the circumstance which gave rise to their opinions. Dom Sebastião, King of Portugal, was educated by the Jesuits, who, it is generally supposed, were in the pay and interest of the King of Spain. At their instigation he undertook an expedition into Africa in the year 1577, and in August of the same year, all his army, which consisted of a mixture of Portuguese, Germans, and Italians, was totally defeated at the battle of Alcazar, and he himself disappeared, and his body was immediately buried or burned. Few of the Portuguese escaped, but none of the survivors could affirm, that they saw the king perish in the battle; on the contrary, there were witnesses who deposed, that they saw him afterwards on the road that led to the

river. This gave rise to a notion that the king had not perished, but that he had lost his way in Africa; the word used was *se perdéra,* which is an ambiguous phrase, and means both one and the other.

The consequence of this battle was very serious for Portugal. The Spaniards availed themselves of their advantage over their rivals, like the Spartans, and reduced the nation to a state of dependence on them. They seized on the country, and from 1580 to 1640, ruled it with a rod of iron. The imposition of their government, was like that of the thirty tyrants, and the Portuguese, like the Athenians, denominate it a kind of slavery, and call it *the sixty years of captivity.*

Many persons were incited to be the instruments, of shaking off this intolerable yoke, and many Dom Sebastiãos, availing themselves of the uncertainty and ambiguity of the fate of the king, started up and personated him. The most remarkable was a Dom Sebastião of Genoa, who told so many minute and secret circumstances of the King Sebastião, that the credulous did not doubt he was the real man, and the better informed were convinced, that he must have had some personal communication with him. The Spaniards demanded him, and he was

basely delivered up to them: they condemned him to the galleys, where he ended his days.

Dreams, prophecies, comets, portentous signs in the heavens, and all manner of preternatural things, were now seen and heard in Portugal; and they were circulated by the authority of the clergy, who gave them countenance and support.

Among the predictions of an early date, and still extant, are certain Pythian oracles, delivered in verse by a shoemaker, denominated Francisco Bandarra. These declare that Dom Sebastião was taken by God from his enemies, and concealed in a desert island under the care of a holy hermit; that he is still alive and well, and would appear on a cloudy morning, and resume the usurped throne of his ancestors.

Others in high repute, though of much more recent origin, were delivered by a certain Pretinho de Japão, or the little Negro of Japan.

But there was a Madre Leonadro, a nun of the convent of Monchique, in Oporto, who had sundry visions and dreams on the subject, which she revealed to her father confessor, and he has published them to the world, with all the stamp of authenticity which he could give them.

Every person who has rendered any essential

service to Portugal, has been at times recognised as the expected Dom Sebastião, in whom the prophecies have been accomplished, and who has appeared in visions and dreams. Many believe that Dom John the Fourth, who expelled the Philips of Spain from the throne of Portugal, was the one waited for. The Marquis of Pombal, who was called Sebastião João de Caravalho, also obtained credit with many, as being actually the person whose name he bore; and at the present day the son of the Infanta Dona Maria Theresa, eldest daughter of Dom John VI. is, by a certain party in Portugal, now given out as the real Simon Pure.

But besides those who avail themselves of popular prejudices to promote their objects, there is actually a considerable number of persons, both in Portugal and Brazil, who simply and seriously believe, at this day, that King Sebastião, who disappeared in Africa, is not dead, but will again reappear in his proper person; the Portuguese say at Lisbon, and the Brazilians at Rio de Janeiro, which is a favoured city, and originally and properly called after his name. It is generally supposed that the number in Portugal exceeds 1,000 persons, and in Brazil about twice as many more. They have no particular place of meeting, and form no

distinct congregation with any peculiar doctrine except this. Their common article of faith is, that Sebastião will certainly appear, and that the event will happen in their own life-time; and they expect him with as much zeal and simplicity, as the modern Jews expect the Messiah.*

In the Minas Geräes they are most numerous, where they resemble the Quakers or Moravians in England, and are distinguished for their industry, frugality, benevolence, and simplicity. In Rio they are also numerous, where I have seen and conversed with many individuals.

I was introduced to one of them at the convent of S. Antonio; he was a man about sixty, rather lusty, with a soft flabby face. He talked a great deal on general subjects; but he was led, at my request, to the subject of King Sebastião, when, as if some chord was struck with which all his sympathies vibrated, he at once burst out into a rhapsody, uttering series of prophecies with the greatest volubility and perseverance. At every commotion which had taken place during the revolutionary transit of the country, he was firmly persuaded that it indicated the approach of the lost king. Another

* The best account of this sect is to be found in a book now very rare, entitled, "Portugal Regenerado," which details many of their extravagant and wild opinions.

whom I saw, keeps a shop in the Rua Direita, and sells iron-ware; and he actually disposed of many articles in the line of his business, to several persons, who engaged to pay him an advanced price, when Dom Sebastião appeared, and he has engaged not to demand payment till that period.

But people enter into regular and legal deeds and bonds on this subject, before proper authorities, and I have read an obligation of this kind which was duly attested before a tabellion, or notary, and several witnesses. It is as follows:

"The 6th of May, 1823, in this very loyal and heroic city of Rio de Janeiro, Colonel Joaquim de Sousa Menellas, commander of the order of Christ, whom I know for such, presented himself at my office, and said, in the presence of the undersigned witnesses, that on the 7th of October last past, of his own full and entire will, he had promised to Jozé Morão Tello, to pay him the sum of ten contos of reis, if, in the space of ten years, to count from this day, Dom Sebastião, king of Portugal should appear, and that he would fulfil the obligation as soon as it could be proved, that he had reappeared. And the said colonel has declared, moreover, that some days after this promise, he had of his own free will increased the sum by two contos

more of reis, proposing to fulfil the obligation by this present act, and binding his person and his present and future goods to the obligation, and with perfect knowledge, of his own free will, that the obligation do subsist and have its full effect, that none of his heirs can annul it, provided he himself die in the interval. This he has signed, as I affirm on my faith, and he has signed it before the undersigned witnesses.

"JOSE PEREZ GARCIA, Notary."

I inquired after the contracting parties, and my informant said he believed one of them was dead, and the other still living. He holds the obligation, firmly persuaded he should receive the twelve contos of reis before his death.

The great seminary for ecclesiastical preparation was at Mariana in the Minas Geräes; but recently two universities have been founded for the education of the laity, one at St. Paul's and the other at Pernambuco. They as yet confer degrees only in law, but it is supposed their powers and system of education will be enlarged. Besides these, every town has its primary schools, and generally one Latin professor at least. At Rio de Janeiro the following provision is made for education:

One Military Academy, where the student

attends regular courses of lectures on mathematics, fortification, &c. for seven years.

One Naval Academy, from which the student embarks at the end of three years.

One Surgical and Medical Academy, where students graduate at the end of five years.

One Academy of the Fine Arts, where painting, sculpture, and architecture are taught.

Two Ecclesiastical Seminaries, where Latin, Greek, English, French, rhetoric, philosophy, and divinity are taught.

To these are annexed,—

One professorship of Botany.
One . . . . . of Chemistry.
One . . . . . of Mineralogy.
One . . . . . of Physics.
One . . . . . of Philosophy.
One . . . . . of Rhetoric.
One . . . . . of English.
One . . . . . of French.
One . . . . . of Greek.
Several . . . . of Latin.

For the stipend of these professors 11,000,000 reis are annually granted.

Besides these there are two general schools on Lancaster's principle of mutual instruction, and a primary school for reading, writing, and arithmetic in almost every street in the town. The salary of the professor of a primary school is generallly about three hundred dollars; the

other professors receive about five hundred. All students are indiscriminately admitted on proper application, nor is any distinction allowed to be made as to rank or colour; the son of the poorest artisan, or duskiest mulatto, or free negro, is equally entitled to attend, and receives a gratuitous education from the different professors in the several classes.

I have visited most of these institutions, and I send you the result of my observation. In the military and naval academies, the students, if they pass their first examination and wish to join either service, become aspirantes, and begin to receive a monthly pay, and are then promoted in rotation. They undergo an annual examination, and if they do not answer sufficiently well, they may repeat the same studies for another year; but if then they be found deficient, they are dismissed as incapable. In the army they may attain to a certain rank afterwards, but in the navy no student is admitted, who has not fulfilled his term of years and answered his examinations.

This facility of education, and general admission into these seminaries, have filled the army and navy, as well as the church, with men from the humblest stations in life; nor is any idea of rank or family connected with an elevated station in either service, nor any other

respectability, than that which the personal conduct of the officer may give it. There is a natural pride among the lower orders, to see their sons decorated with military distinctions, and they prefer this pursuit, while a similar pride withholds persons of distinction, from placing their sons in a service, where they must associate with people, of a grade in society, so inferior to themselves. Hence I am informed that the greater number of officers in both services, are sons of mechanics, and hence it is supposed that the political sentiments of the army, are in accordance with that of the class of people, from whom they are taken. I had not much opportunity of mixing with them, but those I did meet were urbane and civil, and did not seem at all deficient in the qualifications of gentlemen and officers; and on parade, where I frequently saw them, their dress and deportment were not inferior to those in any other service.

The great school of medicine is the hospital of the Misericordia. One of the medical attendants is O. D. Mireilles, a mulatto, and one of those students, sent by the emperor to Europe for his medical education. While at Paris he was introduced to me and some of my family, and we had an opportunity of showing

him some little attentions. This he did not forget; and when I met him afterwards in Brazil, he was anxious to return it fourfold. He was an amiable, good natured, and intelligent young man, and I am indebted to him for much kindness and information. To Dr. Coates also, the physician of the British embassy and residents at Rio, I am much obliged for some communications on the state of medicine and diseases in the country.

The hospital of the Misericordia, the great school where students see practice, is an immense edifice situated near the Calabouço, on the spot where the first houses were built, after the removal of the town within the harbour. Here also was the first hospital erected, and it dates its foundation so early as the year 1582. By the active benevolence of the irmandade of the order of Misericordia, the accommodations of the sick were extended as the town enlarged, and they are still increasing in proportion to the increasing population; above one hundred thousand crusados having been lately expended on this most useful charity. It is entirely supported by voluntary subscription. There is no statute of Mortmain to restrain the devout Brazilian; and at his death he leaves almost always some of his property, either in houses or lands, to pious

or charitable uses. The former are generally marked by the signature of the order of the irmandade to which they are left, and amongst them is the name of this. I have been surprised in walking through the streets of Rio, to see the numbers of houses which had the word "Misericordia" written on them, and would have inferred that a considerable part of the town had been left to support this excellent charity. Among the other sources of revenue is one peculiar, I believe, to Rio. The people, as I noticed before, are vain of their funerals, and go to a considerable expense in decorating their coffins altogether beyond their means. To gratify this desire, and at the same time to limit the expense, the Misericordia keeps and lets out splendid coffins for hire. The body is carried in one of them to the grave, where it is deposited naked or sewed up in a cloth, and the coffin is sent back and hired to another corpse. This practice creates a considerable revenue, and the irmandade of the Misericordia are alone allowed to employ it.

With my friend D. Mireilles, I frequently visited this hospital, where he passed every morning in assiduous attendance. The edifice is a vast irregular building, formed of additions made at different periods; the nucleus of which, is a quadrangle with galleries round it, which

lead to the different wards. On one side of the hall of entrance is the board room where the directors sit; on the other a very large pharmacy or apothecary's shop, where the medicines prescribed for the patients are compounded. It is the general hospital for all ranks, slaves as well as free; and for all sexes and diseases, surgical as well as medical; separate wards being appropriated for each class of patients. Every one presenting himself at the gate is indiscriminately admitted, and placed in the department of his disease, but you see no separation of persons; black and white, slave and free, occupy contiguous beds in the same wards; and distemper here, like death elsewhere, levels all distinction.

From the main building runs a long corridor, having cells at each side for lunatic patients, with whom severity is never, and even coercion seldom, resorted to. The natural disposition of the Brazilians is averse to both; but besides that, they see here, as well as elsewhere, that such treatment only exasperates the cause of the disease. Indeed the patients seemed very harmless; their malady principally had a religious tendency; and one man always followed me, and whenever I turned round, I saw him with uplifted hands behind my back, praying

for the salvation of my soul; his own he thought already secure.

At the extremity of the corridor is a great cemetery, which is the general receptacle of the poor, die where they may. The mode of burial is very summary: a large deep trench is dug, in which the bodies are laid. Before they are deposited here, they are placed on a platform, in a small house in the middle of the cemetery, till several are collected together, when a funeral service is said for them all, and they are deposited in the trench without coffins; sometimes naked, but more usually sewed up in coarse canvass, or the fragment of a mat, and their bodies are laid across, generally the head of one to the feet of the other. I never visited this place that four or five bodies were not lying for interment; and I always met others carried in, while I went out. Beside the cemetery is a dissecting room, where every student may freely take whatever body he pleases to anatomise, without any apprehension from prejudice or prosecution.

When I went over the wards, there were 670 patients confined with various complaints. The greater number were febrile cases, but not of a dangerous, or a contagious kind, which they suppose do not exist in the country; and I was sorry to find a great many syphilitic. These,

with hydrocele, eruptions of various characters, and different degrees of tumours resembling elephantiasis, constituted the great mass of the diseases of the hospital. The doctor went round, accompanied by a number of students. He stopped at every bed; a reporter took down the symptoms, on which he made clinical remarks, which the students entered in their books, and he passed on. Every thing was conducted with the greatest regularity. The place was whitewashed, clean, and sweet, though the wards were so crowded, that it was necessary to have three ranges of beds, with hardly a passage between them. It is proposed to build several new additions, to enlarge it to the rapid increase of population; and it will then be one of the most extensive, as well as one of the most liberal institutions of the kind, that ever was supported by the voluntary contributions of private individuals. Two physicians and three surgeons are in constant attendance.

Immediately above the Misericordia, on a hill, is the great military hospital, which is exclusively for soldiers; and is as clean, and well-regulated, as any similar institution in Europe.

Formerly, it was the universal practice for physicians to graduate at Coimbra, and surgeons

only were educated in the country, who were held in low estimation, classed with barbers, and the sons of very poor parents. Still a classical education is not necessary; as by a particular edict, all their prescriptions must be written in the vulgar tongue; and the quantity of the medicine prescribed, not in numerals, but written at length in letters, similar to an act passed in England for that purpose. Students, however, must attend a prescribed course of study, during five sessions, each extending eight or nine months; they must understand French before they can matriculate; and an examination of their progress by the whole of the professors, takes place at the end of every course. Having completed these studies, they are examined by a faculty, who decide as to their qualifications and capability to practise medicine. No degrees are at any period granted; but a diploma, or license, declaring the person qualified, is given; and under this sanction he becomes a practitioner. Formerly, it was necessary to obtain a license from the physico mor, or cirugião mor, of the empire, for which a fee was paid. These two offices, however, were abolished during a late session of the chambers, as useless, and opening the way to great partiality and corruption; and in

their place was substituted the faculty of examiners.

As there is no prejudice existing among the people against the dissection of dead bodies, or no law to prevent it, that important part of medical education is perfectly free and unrestricted. It is well known to the public, that anatomy is necessarily taught by dissection, and the constant practice of the students; but not the smallest repugnance is ever expressed on the subject; nor do poor or destitute persons show the least dislike to enter the hospital, because they know their bodies will be subject to the knife of the anatomist. The people are remarkably careless about the disposal of their dead friends. They often told me, that their immortal soul was the only object of their solicitude, as they knew their bodies were nothing more than clay, and deserved no more care when the immaterial spirit had left it. The bones they preserve, as they would a lock of their hair; and annex no more sanctity or respect to them, than they would to any other personal memorial. Dissection, however, is not so often resorted to as might be supposed, from the great facility afforded; the rapid putrescency of the body after death, in a warm climate, and the necessity for interment within twenty-four

hours after decease, are considerable impediments to the practice. When a cadaver is brought for the purpose, it is always removed the next, and generally the same day, after the demonstration or lecture is over; and a pupil has rarely the benefit of tracing the parts, by a minute and continued inspection of the same body, or of making an anatomical preparation; though there is nothing to prevent his taking as many as he pleases, for the purpose. Dr. Coates informed me, that he dissected many bodies in the anatomy hall, and never met any student, within the building, engaged in the same pursuit.

Nor are there many *post-mortem* examinations. Where it may be necessary to ascertain the nature of a complaint, of which a patient died, either for the information or the benefit of the surviving part of a family, neither the friends of the deceased, nor the sick person before death, ever seem to have the smallest objection: though the Portuguese physicians say there were formerly prejudices against it, and it was necessary to have the permission of the police for that purpose. During a residence and practice of ten years in the country, Dr. Coates knew of only three or four cases of opening bodies; and two took place because of some

difference of opinion with respect to the cause of death.

There are no fixed fees: physicians and surgeons practise indiscriminately in every branch of the profession. Both, likewise, are called in as accoucheurs. The house of a midwife is distinguished by a white cross, marked on the door.

The diseases most prevalent and most severe, are bilious remitting fevers, dysentery, and liver complaints; and these are of most common occurrence in the hot season, during the months of January, February, and March. They, however, are less severe in their character, yield to a milder treatment, and are of longer duration when they do terminate fatally, than in any country between the tropics. Indeed, the general salubrity of Brazil, and its exception from disease, is evinced in many instances. At one time, there were here so many ships of war, that it was thought necessary to establish for them an hospital on shore. Col. Cunningham, who had a superintendance in it, informed me, that out of 6000 persons, composing the crews, many of them were of the most careless and intemperate habits; and the utmost he remembers to be in the hospital at the most sickly time, was sixty; and of these very few died.

Occasionally, however, a greater degree of sickness prevails. The low alluvial soil at the opposite side of the bay, extending from the Organ mountains to the Atlantic, is intersected by numerous streams, and liable to inundation and stagnant water. In February, 1829, all that district, particularly in the vicinity of Magé, was attacked, during the heats and rains, with an intermittent disease that had all the character of yellow fever; and they apprehended that this scourge of other parts of America, had been at length imported and established in Brazil; and even priests refused to visit the sick in that district.

During this time the host was seen in frequent procession through the streets of Rio, sometimes carried by night in a carriage attended by tapers. The first time I met it, I was at a loss to conceive what it was; people on foot knelt down, and those on horseback alighted, and reverently took off their hats while it was passing. The frequency of this sight added greatly to the alarm of the people. Physicians were sent over, however, and a close examination and inspection took place, and their reports calmed the rising apprehensions. It appeared that it was a common fever, and neither dangerous nor contagious, though very general; and the timid priests,

whose conduct tended not a little to spread the alarm, were severely reprimanded by their superiors, and one was sent out of the country.

Small-pox, called by the people bexigas, sometimes is very prevalent and dangerous. So early as the year 1811, vaccination had been introduced by Dom John, and since then orders were issued to establish in Rio, and other captaincies of Brazil, vaccine institutions; two physicians now attend at the consistorial church of the Rosario, and all persons are directed to bring their children to be inoculated by them every Sunday; and for the support of this institution government allocate annually 1,000 milreis. In April, 1828, however, the small-pox broke out in the provinces of Ceará and Espiritu Santo, and nearly depopulated some districts. All the vaccine matter sent from Rio failed, and those who relied on its efficacy, fell victims afterwards to small-pox. It was supposed that from this and other epidemic diseases, excessive drought, and the number of persons drawn to the army of the south, the population of Ceará, which four years before consisted of 200,000 persons, was reduced, when I was in Brazil, to half that number. The alarm of small-pox was so great, that people eagerly caught at every information about it. My brother had been

engaged in introducing vaccination among the Indians of North America, and had published some notices of its efficacy, and the terrible effects he had witnessed of the ravages of the small-pox. These notices were extracted into the Brazil papers, and recommended to general attention; and application was made in England for efficacious matter, to be sent out hermetically sealed.

Sciatica is also a complaint very common to travellers in Brazil, particularly during the rainy season. It is supposed by some to arise from the heat of the back of the mule below, and the wet above; and, as a preventive, they frequently ride with a saddle-cloth of dressed sheep-skin, with the wool on, and I was warned not to travel without such a precaution.

A disease, called in the country bobas, is frequently attended with fearful consequences. It resembles the frambesia or yaws of the West Indies. The body swells and breaks out into ulcers, which have often the appearance of mulberries, and the patients become exceedingly loathsome. It is infectious by contact, but is also communicated, according to the theory of the country, in a manner that defies all precaution. The eye sometimes is partially affected, and a small fly is then attracted by the

discharge; this insect comes loaded with the contagious matter, and communicates it to the next person, on whose face he happens to alight.

Another problematical insect communicates a disease which is followed, in some instances, by very serious effects. This is called the bichu or chigre, and by the Negroes of Brazil, beesh. A small tumour is felt in the foot, generally in the heel or under the toes, attended with a slight pain, and some itching. On opening it, a sac is discovered bedded in the flesh, sometimes larger than a pea; and on examining it with a microscope, I found it to be a complete nidus, filled with perfectly formed eggs. If suffered to continue, or taken out incautiously, so that the sac be broken, a considerable inflammation ensues, and it degenerates into a foul ulcer, which often terminates in a permanent swelling, and an incurable sore, attended with total lameness. This disorder is universal among negroes, and the poorer classes who walk through dust or sand without covering to the feet; nor do even shoes or boots protect those who wear them, as there was scarcely a single person of my acquaintance, who had not been attacked at some time. Many of the unfortunate Irish returned home incurably lame by it. But the circumstance which renders the origin of the

disease a matter of obscurity, is, that the parent insect, I believe, has never been seen, nor, though the sac is evidently a nidus, containing organized eggs, has it been known to mature within it any living offspring. I have been exceedingly curious to discover them, but I never could detect either one or the other, nor could any person to whom I applied for information, distinctly describe them, as things they had ever seen. It is, however, the universal opinion of the country that the disease is caused by some living thing, and hence it is called bichu, or the insect, and naturalists consider it a kind of flea.*

Another disease very universal, and which no stranger escapes, is the prickly heat, which generally attacks Europeans in summer, and usually after bathing in salt water. It first appears in the form of pimples, which burst out on the neck or waist, or such places as are liable to increased heat, from the confinement or pressure of any part of the dress. From hence it proceeds in succession over the face, breast, back, and limbs, till the whole body is covered by crustaceous eruptions, exuding some times a fluid, but more usually chalky particles,

* Pulex minimus.

the size of a pin's point, with a white branny scurf between. The eruption is attended with a very disagreeable and painful sensation of pricking, as if the skin was actually perforated with pins and needles. This alternates with a violent itching, which it is impossible to resist, and it is always followed by a great soreness of the parts. From the unceasing and constant irritation, the patient has really no repose night nor day, and the only consolation is, that it is not only not dangerous, but a proof of rude and vigorous health, which, in fact, the person enjoys in every other respect, while it continues. No remedies, therefore, are ever taken to remove or suppress it, as it is justly considered a salutary effect of nature, to throw off morbific matter from some internal part. As the weather cools the pustules gradually disappear, and are succeeded by a swelling of the hands and legs, with an exfoliation of the skin, as in the sequelæ of scarlatina. When I first arrived at Rio, I escaped it by going up to the higher and cooler country; but it only postponed its attack, for, on my return, it seized me, as it had done others, and did not leave me till I again passed the equator.

Lock-jaw is not a disease so common in Brazil as in the West Indies. But it sometimes

occurs from punctures and wounds. As, also, another of an extraordinary nature. A negro boy was pointed out to me, who had complained of a violent pain in his head, particularly across the eyes, attended with much fever. This continued for two days, and on the third a number of worms dropped from his nose, and in a short time after, came down also from the roof of his mouth. They continued to fall for two or three days, and then he was entirely free from pain. They were about half an inch long, white, and terminated by a brown head, exactly resembling those generated in putrid flesh; he could remember nothing of a fly or any other insect getting into his nose. He was a native of Mozambique, and had never heard of the disease in his own country. It was supposed these insects were generated in the frontal sinus.

The people labour under various symptoms of undefined illness, which are frequently attributed to the effects of poison, administered by their slaves. Besides the common deleterious vegetables and minerals, they have secret means of destroying life, which, without producing immediate or alarming effects, gradually undermine the constitution, and cause slow but certain death. One of these, I was informed, was human hair, cut into very minute

portions, which attach themselves to the coats of the stomach and intestines, and produce their effect by continued erosion. It is probable, however, that many of the symptoms attributed to such causes, are merely sensations of dyspepsia, to which the Brazilians are liable.

Negroes often bring on themselves maladies by devouring dirt and lime. It is often supposed, however, that this propensity is the effect, and not the cause of disease, and arises from the morbid state of the stomach, similar to an affection often found in Europe to accompany worms in children.

But the disease most revolting and most general in Rio, is a tendency to local swellings and enlargements in the form of elephantiasis. Elephantiasis, properly so called, is not a common disease, I am told, in the country; but the enormous tumours of the lower limbs that cause them to resemble the legs of an elephant, constricted by bands and rings, is a frightful deformity that every where strikes the stranger, and is sometimes attended with that blotched scrofulous skin on the face, which Quintus Serenus describes, as the distinctive character of the elephantiasis. It is supposed to be a disease of the lymphatics. It sometimes begins with a constitutional disturbance of the system,

and sometimes with a local pain only in the part about to be affected, which is succeeded by rigors and other febrile symptoms. When it attacks one of the inferior limbs, it is generally first discerned above the inner ankle, and rapidly extends up the leg and thigh to the inguinal glands, along the course of the lymphatic vessels, which feel cordy, exquisitely tender to the touch, and marked by a line of red in their course. Sometimes the complaint begins higher up, and extends to the glands of the axilla, which swell and suppurate. When the inflammation subsides it leaves behind it an enormous tumour, either in the form of hydrocele or tumified legs, and sometimes both together, which continue with the patient generally for the remainder of his life; but are attended with no other inconvenience, than loading him with a burdensome mass of flesh, which he is obliged to carry about with him, and which seems to be coagulable lymph, thrown out by the vessels when in an excited state, but now become inert and insensible.

Connected with this is the erisepella, as the Brazilians call it, which sometimes begins with a pain in the gland, succeeded by fever in a high degree; after which the disease declares itself, often affecting the head and bringing on a kind

of stupor, considered very alarming. Notwithstanding this, for the first three days no treatment is applied, even if the patient should be in the most imminent danger from excitement. After that, emetics and cathartics are administered, and flour and absorbent powders applied to the limb; the Brazilians being greatly apprehensive of any wet or cold application. The disease, when it once attacks a person, is apt to return on the slightest alteration of the usual diet or exposure to cold, and seems peculiarly connected with the digestive organs.

It is not too much to say that one-tenth of the people of Rio are attacked with this disease, in one form or other. I never went out that I did not meet with various objects, both white and black, who exhibited the most horrid appearance, dragging after them the parts of the body afflicted by it. The steps of all the convents and churches are filled with miserable black and mulatto slaves, who being no longer capable of work, from this complaint, were lingering out a miserable existence on the charity of the fathers. Sometimes the tumours were covered with very foul ulcers. I was one day in the neighbourhood of Rio botanizing in a hedge, and two white men came up to me. Seeing me gathering

plants, they supposed me to be a doctor culling simples, and applied to me for a cure. They pulled up their pantaloons and showed me misshapen limbs, nearly as thick as their emaciated bodies, constricted in some places into folds, by circular bands, and covered with foul green sores too horrible almost to look at. I was sorry I knew nothing that could relieve them, particularly so as they said they had been dismissed from the hospitals, and given up by all the physicians as incurable. I was frequently accosted in the same way.

The other modification of it is still more common. I constantly met people in the streets of all colours, who seemed scarcely able to walk, from the immense tumours which they carried. Their dress is generally enlarged into the form of a sack, in which the protuberance is deposited; and however unsightly and morbid it may appear to others, it does not seem at all to affect the health or spirits of the afflicted persons, who walk about and do their ordinary business with as much activity as if they laboured under no such impediment. I have observed that the corpulent shop-keepers of Rio, whose habits are generally sedentary and their dispositions indolent, are affected in this way in a larger proportion than any other class.

They are very fond of cards and drafts, and when they sit together, I am told, they form a table of these various tumours, on which they play their game. It is almost exclusively confined to the capital, and but little seen in the upper country of the interior, where it appears to the people an unknown thing. Some time ago, a traveller from Rio affected in this way was proceeding to the Minas Geräes, and was stopped at the registry of Rio Parahiba, where they make a strict examination. Supposing that he carried concealed goods in his sack, they treated him so roughly in search of them, that he died of the injury shortly after.

But the most extraordinary and almost preternatural example of this kind, I saw in the hospital of the Misericordia. He was a negro, aged about twenty-five, without any injury or apparent cause to account for it; the tumour began to enlarge, and continued, unaccompanied by much distress, to extend itself till it reached the ground. When he stood sideways, the sac projected itself like a huge bag as big as the rest of his body, before and behind; and when he turned his back, it was so large as to conceal his legs, though they also were enormously swelled with elephantiasis, and stood like misshapen posts, when seen at each side. From his hips

downward he presented the most extraordinary and unnatural spectacle that a human being could be supposed susceptible of; but from his waist upwards, he was muscular and well proportioned, and his face healthy and comely in a degree unusual in a negro's countenance. He was in other respects in high health, and so full of spirits that he was always singing and dancing. His lower extremities were clad in a loose bag of coarse cotton, out of which nothing was seen but his feet. In this way he supported, without any inconvenience, an excrescence weighing more than thirty pounds,—was never absent from the negro dances, which he always led,—and was the merriest and most active attendant in the hospital.

Hydrocele in its common form, unconnected with elephantiasis, is also a very usual disease, and sometimes a fatal one to strangers; several young men in foreign mercantile houses, lately fell victims to it. It is usually attributed to excess; to indulgence in high seasoned dishes, in which Brazilian cookery delights; and to bad water. It is treated as in Europe, by puncture, tapping, and injection, generally with success.

Besides the remedies adopted from European practice, now generally followed in the country,

there are some which the natives adhere to, as much more efficacious; and a dernier resort when regular treatment fails. A friend of mine was seized with a painful attack of sciatica, from travelling, as he supposed, on a mule in wet weather. Having used European means without success, a Brazilian persuaded him to try his remedy. He laid him on his face, bared his back, and then caused one of his negroes to stand on his hips, and trample on him with his naked warm feet. At first he gave him intolerable pain; but by degrees he felt himself considerably relieved, and in a short time the pain entirely ceased; and he attributes it to this rough, but effectual mode of negro champooing.

On another occasion, a Brazilian, at whose house I stopped, told me he had a bag, which he said was the dispensary which supplied his whole establishment with the only medicines they used; and calling his slave, he directed him to bring his bolsa das cobras, or purse of serpents. His slave immediately brought a canvass bag, from which he produced some dried skinned snakes; and he informed me they were a sovereign remedy for any disease of the chest. Whenever he, or any of his family were so effected, he took a joint of the animal, pounded it in a mortar, and collecting some herbs, he boiled them

together. A few spoonfuls of this, he said, never failed to remove the most obstinate attack. This is a remnant of that faith, which the faculty of Europe once placed in viper broth.

For rheumatic pains, they use cupping, in a curious way, and a negro is generally the operator. I was one day passing through a street, in the rear of the palace, and I saw a negro doctor administering to some patients, who were sitting on the steps of a church. He bound the arm and shoulder of a woman, who seemed in great pain; and making slight scarifications in several places with the broken blade of a razor, he patted the parts with the flat, till the blood began to ooze out; he then placed small cow-horns over them, and applying his mouth to a perforation at the tip, he dexterously exhausted the air, and then stopping it with clay, it remained firmly attached to the skin. In this way he fastened seven horns from the elbow to the shoulder, where they exhibited a very extraordinary appearance. When removed, the arm was covered with blood; and the woman said she was greatly relieved.

Negroes are always the operators, also, for extracting the bichu. They dexterously, with the point of a blunt knife, raise the skin and open the flesh round the sore, without drawing

blood or breaking the sac; and thus extract the whole nidus without disturbing a single egg. They then fill the aperture left behind with snuff, or the ashes of tobacco; and it generally heals up without any further inconvenience. I saw a negro extract five of these little sacs from the heel of a man, which left so many deep and bloodless cavities, that it looked like a honey-comb.

But the last resort of a Brazilian when all other things fail, is the blood of a black cock, which is a remedy for every disease, but particularly erisepella. Walking with a friend one day, we met a man who was labouring under this complaint: he was asked if he had tried some particular medicines which were named, and he said he had not, because he had tried the only effectual cure in the world, and as that had not succeeded, he gave up all the rest in despair. Curious to know what it was, I inquired, and was informed it was the blood of a black cock, taken internally, and smeared over the part affected. The man died sometime after, obstinately refusing to try any other remedy.

Diseases of children that cannot be accounted for, are attributed to the effects of an evil eye; and the Brazilians are as much addicted to a belief in this fascination as the

Romans of old, or the Greeks of modern times; and they take as many precautions against it. One of them is rather a singular device. They suspend over the head of the child to be protected, a little hand, with the thumb placed between the fingers, which they call a figa. It is made of gold, silver, coral, and other materials, and sold in all the silversmiths' shops, though they annex to it a gross allusion. This emblem had been very common among the Romans; and in David's engraving of the lamps dug up at Pompeii, is an exact representation of the figa of the Brazilian children, connected with things which leave no doubt of its coarseness.* But what connexion the device protecting a child from an evil eye, can have with this symbol, as used by the ancients, I am at a loss to conjecture.

The number of native medical men practising at Rio, who are distinguished as *doutores em medicina,* amounts to eighteen; the surgeons to one hundred and five, and the dentists to five. There are besides, eight or ten French and English practitioners.

In the year 1820, on the 9th of November,

* This is supposed to illustrate and explain the *infami digito* of Pers. Sat. II. l. 22.

a decree was passed, allotting the sum of seven millions of reis to the formation of an Academy of Fine Arts in Brazil; and in the month of March, 1824, it was founded at Rio, under the auspices of the emperor, who was dignified with a new title, as "Fundador e Protector da Imperial Academia das Bellas Artes." To form this academy, several professors in the different departments of history and landscape painting, sculpture, architecture, engraving, medal cutting, and mechanics, were invited from France, who were to instruct a number of pupils, and give lectures in their several departments at different hours of the day. For this purpose a new building was erected in the Rua travessa da Moeda, close by the Mint, which is not yet finished. The façade presents a pediment with two long wings, of a mean design, not very creditable to the professor of the architectural department; and it is in a narrow street, with a foundry on the opposite side of the way. It moreover has an inscription over the door in not very classical Latin, ACADEMIA IMP. BELLARUM ARTIUM. So that nothing of the exterior does credit to the elegance and taste naturally expected, where the projectors were professors of the fine arts.

When I visited it, the interior was not finished,

and I saw but one room, round which were several specimens of the professors' and pupils' talents. One was a very large picture by De Bret, the professor of historical painting. It represented the Coronation of the Emperor in the Imperial Chapel, with all the distinguished characters who assisted at it, nearly as large as life, and said to be accurate portraits. The Emperor is sitting on his throne, in his green robes, holding in his hand a staff surmounted by a griffin. Opposite to him, in the gallery, is the Empress, with the little Queen of Portugal, both, I was told, good likenesses. Before him is the present Minister of Justice taking the constitutional oath on a Prayer-book opened at the canon of the mass, and beside is the Bishop of Rio, with his mitre and spectacles, and several other distinguished persons, who were easily recognized by their resemblance.

This large portraiture, the first of the kind, I believe, that ever was executed in Brazil, is more valuable for the likenesses than any other quality. It was intended for the grand saloon of the palace of Rio; but while it was hanging in the Academy, waiting for a frame, it fell to the ground from the wall where it was suspended, when, by the concussion, the canvass

burst in several places, and totally destroyed the picture. This is, as I mentioned before, generally believed not to have been accidental, but the wilful malice of some democrat, who wished to destroy such a monument of Brazilian monarchy, and cut the cord.

This institution is open to every person who wishes to be instructed in the fine arts. No other introduction is necessary, than for a pupil to present himself at the door in a long coat, and he is at once admitted. A distinction is always made between persons wearing coats and jackets, as the latter are always considered in the class of servants, and excluded even from the public gardens.

There are but seven pupils at the Academy, one of whom I met at the palace of the Bishop of Rio, who is his patron. I expressed to the bishop a wish to take with me to Europe some specimen of the progress of the arts in Brazil; and the next morning his protegé called on me with a large painting in a fine gilt frame. It was his first effort at the Academy, and gained a prize. It is an excellent attempt, and promises well for the infant arts in the country. The annual sum allotted for the support of this institution is 6,980 milreis.

Connected with this department, may be con-

sidered the National Museum. It stands on the east side of the Campo d'Acclamacão, and nearly opposite the Senate-house, and its erection was one of the last good acts, for which the people are indebted to Dom John before he left the country. It is a long edifice, with a pediment and portico in the old Portuguese fashion. In front is a gilt globe and crown, and under them the following inscription on a tablet:

IOHANNES VI
REX FIDELISSIMVS
ARTIVM AMANTISSIMVS
A FVNDAMENTIS EREXIT
ANNO MDCCCXXI

It is open every Thursday to the public, from ten till three. The hall below is a kind of guard-house for soldiers, and the museum occupies the rooms above, and consists of a suite of apartments leading one into the other. They contain the usual objects found in such a collection,—birds, beasts, fishes, shells, and minerals, of each of which there are as yet but scanty specimens, in their respective departments. The birds are well preserved, but the greatest part of them are lying on their sides on shelves, not yet set up. Among them I was shown, as curiosities, a swan and a robin red-breast. The

minerals are better arranged, and the entomological families contain many beautiful specimens of butterflies. It is much to be regretted that Spix and Von Martius, who have filled such magnificent museums at Vienna and Munich with the spoils of Brazil, should not have been employed, in the first instance, to fill and arrange that of the country from whence they took them.

Besides these imperfect departments of natural history, there are a few specimens of Egyptian mummies and other antiquities from the old world, and two or three from the new. These are heads taken from some Indian catacombs, I was informed. They are preserved like mummies, and tattooed in a very curious manner. With them were dresses, weapons, and other Indian remains, which form the nucleus of an exceedingly interesting national department, marking the existence of a race that soon "will go hence and be no more seen."

As works of art, there stood in the centre of one of the rooms, two glass cases divided into several chambers. In each of these was the process of some trade or manufacture represented, with all the implements in miniature accurately made. This juvenile performance was exactly like the representations in the Book

of Trades and Arts, published in England for the use of children, and seemed very characteristic of an infant country, yet in the childhood of knowledge. This little mechanic's show-box seemed to excite the attention of the visitors more than any thing else.

The company who entered, were of the humble ranks in life, and many of them common soldiers. They seemed greatly amused and instructed by the various objects, which were quite new to them. Indeed the institution seems a valuable thing for the country in which it is established. It is likely to excite a taste and feeling for objects of nature and art, and create a love for science in the people who visit it. What a vast field of natural history does the fecundity of nature present in the country itself, and what a splendid monument of this department alone might, and perhaps will, be raised here, when native men of science are sufficiently informed to undertake it! The sum paid for the annual support of the museum is 4,512 milreis.

The first dawn of literature in Brazil may be dated from the king's decree of 1808, by which it was permitted to print "Todas e qualquers obras;" it being expedient, as the annalist says, that "the brilliant face of the king should

vivify the country on which it shone, by enlightening every subject of literature."

In consequence of this permission, sundry writers appeared in Brazil, and their works were printed at Rio; but among these the most varied and voluminous, is José da Silva Lisboa Visconde Cayru. He took for his motto, "If we would perpetuate our fame or reputation, we must do things worth writing, or write things worth reading;" and he still continues, at a very advanced period of life, to follow the latter part of his maxim. In 1815, he published the Life of "Lord Wellington," 2 vols. 4to; in 1818, the "Benefits conferred on Brazil by Dom João VI." 2 vols. 8vo; in 1819, "Studies for the Common Good," 4to; and in 1827, the "Brazilian School, or Useful Instruction," 2 vols. 8vo.—José d'Alvarenza has published "Memoirs of the Expedition against the Chinese Pirates of Macao," 1809 and 1810. In 1826, the "Fifth Year of Independence;" in 1828, the "Seventh Year of Independence;" and "Stateira and Zoroastres," a Novel. In 1827, José Victoria dos Sanctos published a "New Theory of the Universe," in 4to, taking for his motto this quotation from Locke, "Philosophy teaches us to seek nature, in the knowledge of her laws, for the cause of events. When this knowledge shall become universal, man will

relinquish his attachment to superstitious and vindictive theology." "A Compendium of Science," with plates, on the subject of arts and sciences, was offered to the famous and heroic Brazilian nation, by a citizen; and "Elements of Music," by Ant. Luis Fagundes. But the most important works are, a "Chorographia Brazilica," containing a history and statistical details of every province, published in 1817, by Padre Manoel de Cazal, in 2 vols. 4to, and dedicated to the king, who granted the author a copyright in it for fourteen years. It is a curious and valuable work, detailing important and accurate information on the parts of this vast country, and does credit to the industry and research of the author; but it wants greatly the elucidation of maps, which, I am told, will accompany a new edition which is now preparing.* Next in interest and importance, is the "Ecclesiastic History of Brazil,"

* Geography is a science in which the Brazilians seem most deficient. I never saw in any house a map even of their own country, much less of any other; and sometimes strange mistakes arise. When it was announced, in the Russian campaign, that the plague was at Bucharest, a circular was sent round, announcing, that all vessels *from that port*, were to perform quarantine, before landing passengers or cargo in any part of Brazil. It was explained that Bucharest was not a port, and a second circular was issued, correcting the first, by stating, that any vessel coming from any *port in the Mediterranean*, must perform quarantine, thereby including Spain, France, and Italy!

by Pizarro, in 9 or 10 vols. folio, published a few years since. The last I shall mention is the "Flora Fluminensis," under the superintendence of Ant. d'Arrabida, Bishop of Anamuria, dedicated to the emperor: it is a fine work, in folio, with plates, executed at Paris, some of which I got specimens of, but the work is not yet finished.

These are a few only of the books published at Rio since printing was permitted, which I have myself read, and of some of them I have copies. It is sufficient to show you, that the Brazilians are an improving people, and though their literary progress is not great, it is, I imagine, much more so than in any other new state in South America.

In periodicals, gazettes, and newspapers, they are still more advanced. In the year 1828, there were 133 periodical papers printed in the whole Peninsula, of which twenty-five were published in Brazil; viz. fifteen at Rio, three at Bahia, and the rest at Pernambuco, St. Paul's, St. João d'el Rey, and Villa Rica. Those at Rio were, "Imperio do Brazil," "Diario do Rio Janeiro," and "Journal do Commercio," daily; "Analista," "Aurora Fluminene," "Astréa," "Courier du Brézil" (French), three times a-week; "Rio Herald" (English), once a-week;

" Malagueta," " Diario dos Deputados," " D. do Senado," " Despertador Constitutionale," " Censor Brazilico," occasionally; " Espelho Diamantino," monthly; " Propagador," or Annals of Medicine, Zoology, and Botany, yearly.

Of these, the " Aurora" is the most decided and liberal. The columns rarely admit foreign news, and are entirely devoted to keeping alive the constitutional spirit. " It is the constitution," it says, " full and reduced to practice, which forms, and is to form, the infallible rule of our social life. It is for this we live, for this we have fought, and for this we will fight for ever." The " Diario do Rio Janeiro" is printed on wretched paper, and is scarcely legible; it consists almost entirely of editals and decrees, with from sixty to seventy advertisements.

The " Analista" is supposed to be the organ of government. It has succeeded the " Gazeta," which two or three years ago performed the same functions. It was distinguished for its scurrility and vulgarity, and many articles were attributed to high rank, which people said bore internal evidence of their authors. It was succeeded by the " Censor," better and more moderately conducted, it is said, by the present minister of the interior. It merged, however, into the " Analista," which

now affects to be polished and classical, but is excessively stupid.

Of a style and character directly opposite to the former, is the "Malagueta," conducted by an ecclesiastic of the name of May. Malagueta is the native name for a small species of capsicum, the most biting and pungent of all peppers, as this is of all periodicals; it is distinguished for its bitter personalities. When it first appeared, it attracted a great deal of notice, as well for the talent it displayed as for the persons it attacked. The family of Andrada, when in the zenith of their favour and power, were the objects of its particular virulence, and just at the time an attempt was made to assassinate the editor. He was wounded and narrowly escaped with his life, and he accused not only them, but the emperor, as the assassins. In proof of this he shewed a handkerchief that one of them had dropped, the owner of which was recognized by its mark. The accused of course denied the fact in the most vehement manner, and even visited him in person, when he was confined with his wounds. Nothing, however, could remove his suspicions, which I am told he perseveres in to this day. He is generally supposed to be a little deranged. Between the "Imperio do Brazil," which is the

organ of the government, and published at the Imperial printing-office, and the "Malagueta," there is a constant war; and as it is part of the freedom of the press here, to attack the editor by name and not his paper, editors are every day brought forward in their proper persons. In a number of the "Imperio" I saw the following passage:—"In No. 86 of the Malagueta, which has fallen into our hands, we observe the gratification with which Senhor May applies to us the epithet *tapel;* but not being able to find the word in any Portuguese dictionary, and being ignorant of the jargon which he speaks, we beg of him to explain his meaning, that we may answer him; although experience has convinced us, that the Senhor is one of those persons, who never blush when convicted of a lie."

The "Courier du Brézil" is written in French, and published on Wednesdays and Saturdays. It gives the fairest and almost the only statement of things passing in the interior, and the news of other countries, much more copiously than all the rest; but it is a ministerial paper, and for that reason bitterly denounced. The "Malagueta" charges it with being an emissary of the French government, sent to invade the country before-hand. The

"Farol Paulista," a provincial paper, thinks it a crime not to be forgiven, that its editor is a Frenchman; and the "Aurora" denounces it to the police. These opinions are evidences of the exceeding jealousy of the people, and their suspicions of all strangers, as enemies to their independence and liberty.

The "Journal do Commercio," like the "Diario," is printed on wretched paper, and the typography so bad that it is hardly legible, though it is in more demand than any other. It is almost entirely filled with editals and advertisements; every publication containing from 80 to 100. Under the head of "Noticias Particulares," one person is informed, that if he does not bring back the books he borrowed, his name will be made public; another, that a particular person wants to speak to him, and warning him at his peril not to disappoint; a third, that his stagnant water is very offensive, and if he does not throw it out, a neighbour will come and spill it in his parlour. Some curious notices also appear from ladies:—"The senhor, who was in the house of Luiza da Conçeição, in the street of Livradio, No. 1, and who requested from the senhora some paper to write on; and having finished his letter, took from her drawer four milreis in gold, a bank note for eight

milreis, and a pair of silk stockings, is requested to restore the articles, if he does not wish to see his name in public. The same favour is requested from the gentleman who carried away her fan, otherwise his name shall also appear."

Distributed frequently with the papers, is a loose sheet, called "Correspondencia:"—it consists of a letter to the editor, attacking some individuals with whom the writer has had a dispute, and it generally contains the most extraordinary libels that ever were published. The editor of the paper, who prints and circulates the libel, incurs no responsibility, provided he does not refuse to print and circulate a libellous answer. I send you one or two specimens, which came to me folded up in my newspapers.

"Retribution.—God being pleased to call from this world to a better, the merchant João Pereira Borba, and he being a man of correct life, wished to prove before his death, by an authentic testimony, that he was an honest man, whose ashes should be respected; and to that end he inserted the following clause in his will:—'I declare that I always have been a neighbour of the merchant José Loureno Dios, a native of S. João d'El Rey, with whom I lived in close friendship; and for that reason, I strictly enjoin my heir not to demand from him a large debt,

which he contracted at my store, by his constant and daily visits to the bung of a cask of Catalonian wine; for it would be a burden to my conscience, if what he owes me was demanded, since it was the vicinity of my store to the said merchant's house, that was the real and proximate cause of his disgracing himself every day, by constant intoxication, by which he has directly and indirectly offended all his countrymen. It would, therefore, be manifest injustice to receive money for that, which renders the merchant this day so contemptible in the eyes of all fellow-citizens.'

"ONE OF THE OFFENDED."

"Senhor Editor of the Astréa, I sign this with a cross, because I can neither read nor write. I was living peaceably in the district of the city of Rezende, where one Simaõ de Roza wished to get possession of my farm; and when I would not surrender it, he proceeded to denounce me with false accusations, by persons he had under his thumb. There is a Padre Marriano Jozé de Roza, a brother of the same Simaõ, who resembles him in every respect. Yes; it was this padre, or rather this monster, that in his own name denounced me, saying, that I had uttered calumnies against his

Imperial Majesty, on which I was taken up, and sent to this city under a guard." After detailing a number of false accusations uttered by this padre against individuals, and enumerating several whom he attacked in order to assassinate; as, though a minister of the gospel, he goes about with arms in his hands, he continues, "but I will not detail the lewdness of this monster, how many unmarried women he lived with, nor his amour with the wife of Francisco de Sylva, his comrade, &c.; or how he sued at law the same patient Francisco, under the pretext of his having burned eleven feet of a coffee plantation. The monster also invited to his house one Anna Ferreira, and gave her a portion of land near himself, where she had the misfortune to bring her daughter, a child of eleven or twelve years old," &c. After detailing a number of similar things, and in the coarsest language, and pointing out, in words not fit to be translated, how he ought to be used, as he himself had used an unfortunate mulatto, whom he suspected of stealing his hens, he concludes—"But I cannot tell you, in one letter, all the atrocities perpetrated by a priest, who says he is a minister of God; but who, saving your presence, Sir, is really a minister of the devil.

"JOAQUIM + JOZE."

These libels constitute a considerable portion of the literary entertainment of Rio. In passing through the streets in the morning, after the issue of the newspapers, I constantly saw groups of neighbours assembled in some shop, and one of them sitting on the counter, reading a sheet of this Correspondencia to the rest. It often happens, that the man attacked is one of the party, who never thinks of any other redress, than a reply of similar scurrility.

This correspondence displays, sometimes, extraordinary traits of national feeling on some points, and the estimation in which different objects are held. By the constitutional code, a freed man cannot be an elector; and to remove the imputation, and to entitle them to the elective franchise, which the Brazilians prize very high, they sometimes produce very extraordinary certificates. A Colonel Joaquim Francisco das Chagas Cateté, was a candidate in his parish for that honour; and a Manöel de Sousa Silva, a chandler, objected to him that he was a freed man. A long scurrilous correspondence ensued, which amused the counters of Rio for several mornings; and at length it ended in the Colonel producing a certificate of his baptism.—"I certify, that in the year 1780, I baptized and placed the holy oil on the

child, Joaquim, the illegitimate son of Francisca das Chagas, a free mulatto woman unmarried, herself illegitimate, and baptized in the parish of S. João, of an unknown father, and then a servant in the house of the Rev. Joaquim Gonçalves de Figueiredo, living in the Bairro da Caturra, of this parish," &c.

"ALBERTO CAETANO ALVES."

The colonel concludes this triumphant refutation of his enemies by this declaration: "I am the chief of my family; I hold the high rank of colonel in the first regiment of the line; and I am bound by the ties of blood, by the function of my high employment, and by the honour of an officer, thus to refute the calumnies uttered against me." And this he does, by proving that he was the natural son of a mulatto servant maid; herself the natural daughter of an unknown father. In Brazil, where so many in high station are themselves the founders of their own families, respectable descent is but little regarded, except by the few who have a claim to it. But I doubt if there could be found, amongst the humblest class in England, a man who would establish his right to a vote, by such an exposure.

There are two public libraries; one at the

convent of S. Bento, and the other the imperial library in the Rua Detraz do Carmo. This latter consists of 60,000 volumes, in all languages, ancient and modern, with plates, charts, maps, and manuscripts; but it is particularly distinguished for its collection of Bibles, more extensive, perhaps, than in any other library in the world; they fill a whole compartment.* The books are arranged in several rooms, particularly in two grand long saloons; one intended exclusively for the use of the royal family, and the other open to the public, who have free access to all the books in every part of the library.

I passed much of my time in this noble establishment; and I think it inferior to nothing of the kind I have seen in Europe, either in extent or liberal accommodation; though

* One of them is a copy of the first bible ever printed. It is on vellum, very beautiful, and in high preservation. It has the following colophon in black letter:—"Pñs hoc opusculū artificiosa adinvētione impr̃mendi ceu caracterizandi absq. calami exaratōne in civitate Mogunt: sīc effigiatū ad eusebiā Dei industrie per Johē: Fust cive et Petrū Schæffer de Gernfleym clericū dioc: ejusdem est consummatū Anno dni M.CCCC.LXII. In vigilia assumpcōis Virg. Marie." "This present work, by a wonderful invention of impressing or marking characters, without tracing them with a pen, thus effected in the city of Mentz, to the piety of God, by the industry of John Fust, citizen, and Peter Schæffer of Guernfleyim, clerk, of the same diocese, was completed in the year of the Lord 1462, in the vigil of the Assumption of the Virgin Mary."

the number of books at present may be more limited. Every one is not only admitted, without question or inquiry, but invited to enter and enlarge their minds. The approach is by a large stone staircase, decorated with fine paintings of the Vatican; and the reading room is a spacious arched saloon, extending from side to side of the building, and ventilated by a breeze or current always passing through it, from the large windows at the extremities. Here, at a long table covered with green cloth, and furnished with desks and apparatus for writing, as at the British Museum, you take your seat, and several librarians, in different parts of the room, are prompt in their attendance to provide you in a moment with every book you call for. All the periodicals of Rio and the provinces are sent every morning; and that, as well as a growing taste for reading, attracts a number of natives, of all colours, to this place, in which they seem to take no less pleasure than pride. It is open every day, except holidays, from nine in the morning; and I know no spot where it is possible to endure the meridian heat more agreeably, or profitably, than in this cool, silent, and elegant retirement. Is it not, then, most unjust, my friend, to accuse the Catholics as enemies to

knowledge? Here is a noble and public literary institution, filled with books on all subjects, founded by a rigid Catholic monarch, and superintended and conducted by Catholic ecclesiastics, on a plan even more liberal, and less exclusive, than any similar establishment in our own Protestant country. The sum of 4,485 milreis are annually allowed for its support.

There are two Lancasterian schools now established at Rio, supported by government, and it is the intention to open nine more in different parishes, and compel all private schools to adopt the same mode of teaching. I visited one of them near the Academy, and better situated. It consisted of a very large and airy hall, capable of holding 300 children, and has been opened nearly three years. About 130 were in attendance; they were very respectable in appearance, the sons of shopkeepers and others of the same rank, and were of all colours, white, brown, and black. They were neatly dressed, and very orderly in their behaviour. The master sat at an elevated desk, and directed their movements by a whistle. When the class was called up, the monitor let down from the wall a semicircle of iron, inside which he stood, and the children formed a crescent outside. They were instructed in reading, writing, and

accounts; and at the end of two years, a selection was made of all who showed any particular talent, and they were passed on to the Academies. The education was entirely gratuitous, and all were indiscriminately admitted, except unfortunate slaves. The form of writing seemed a particular object of the master's care. In the old Portuguese mode, the letters were nearly upright, being only twenty degrees from the perpendicular. The English letters, inclining to thirty-five degrees, were now adopted, and great pains taken to make it universal. All the children seem to have made considerable progress in it, which the master showed me with some exultation.

In consequence of a decree of the sessions of the Chambers in 1827, similar schools were beginning to be established in the Minas Geräes, just as we arrived at Rio. The difficulty was to proportion the salary of the teachers, in a country where population was so dispersed, and the local resources, for the necessaries of life, so precarious. It was settled to be according to the number of scholars, and the consequent labour of the master: 500 reis for each pupil up to 100, and so in proportion up to 300, when the master received 1000 for each, but the stipend was not to exceed 500 milreis,

which was the maximum allowed by law. All the expenses are defrayed by goyernment; the children pay nothing.

In passing through the town you see primary schools in every street, which are always crowded with pupils, cleanly and respectably dressed. Over the door is generally this inscription: "Aula das primeiras literas, Grammatica, Arithmetica, Portugueza e lingua Franceza," but I have never seen an announcement that English was taught.

Besides these schools, which are perfectly free to all, and where no money is received from any pupil, there are others at the houses of private masters, where children of the higher classes are instructed, who pay for their education. One of them is an English boarding school in the Mata Cavallos.

There is no country, perhaps, where education is more extensively diffused among the rising generation, than in Brazil, particularly in the capital; but there yet exists a practice which, I am told, originated in the ignorance of former times, and if so, it is a strong proof how universal it was. When a house is to be let at this day, it is notified by nailing or pasting on the door, a sheet of blank paper. It was formerly considered useless to write or print

particulars, as the persons for whose information they might be intended, were known universally to be unable to read. But I have also seen here a sheet of blank paper, fastened to the legs and horns of horses and cattle intended for sale: this is also the practice in Portugal, where, a friend informed me, it was intended as a *carte blanche*, furnishing materials for writing down the terms of sale, when the bargain was complete.

The vast country of Brazil, abounding with produce of various kinds, and an almost interminable capability of producing more, seems likely in time to exceed all others in commercial pursuits, and a considerable part of the commerce of the world to centre in the harbour of Rio de Janeiro. To this its local advantages give it a fair claim. The Sugar-loaf is such a perfect direction, that there is no possibility of mistaking its entrance. The passage is so bold, broad, and deep, that there is no danger of running ashore, and there is no necessity for a pilot to conduct strange ships; in fact, it is almost the only harbour in the world, where pilots are not established, because it is almost the only one where they are not wanted. The sea and land breezes are so regular, strong, and steady, that a ship may always count, with

nearly a certainty, that she can sail in in the morning with one, and sail out in the evening with the other. The harbour on the inside is so extensive, that all the ships in England could probably anchor there, without impeding one another; and the anchorage is so good, that no ship ever cuts her cable or loses her station. The bay is so land-locked, and so protected from gales of wind on all sides, that it is perfectly secure, even for boats, at all seasons of the year. If to this be added the exceeding salubrity of the climate, that crews are never affected with those distempers that sweep them off in other tropical harbours; the great abundance of articles of the first necessity, wood, water, and provisions in profusion, and an interminable capability of producing more, according to the demand; and its geographical position, projected into the ocean, midway on the shores of a great continent, and in the most convenient spot for ships, passing from the Atlantic to the Pacific, it should seem as if nature had intended it as the great receptacle of commerce in the new world, by conferring on it all the local advantages which a harbour can possess.

When therefore the country was opened to the enterprise of foreigners, it is not at all surprising

that the city of Rio and its commerce, should have increased with an unexampled rapidity. Such was the avidity of speculation in England, that every thing was sent to Brazil, without the smallest regard to its fitness or adaptation, to the climate or wants of the people, who were to purchase them. The shops and ware-rooms of Fleet-street and Cheapside were ransacked and swept; and the consideration was not what should be sent, but how soon could it arrive. In this way, when the multitude of cases were opened at the Custom-house, I have been told, the Brazilians could not contain their astonishment and mirth, at the incongruous things they saw displayed before them: implements useful only to Canadians and Greenlanders, and comforts and conveniences fit only for polar latitudes, were cased up and sent in abundance to regions between the tropics.

Among this ingenious selection, was a large supply of warm blankets, warming-pans to heat them, and, to complete the climax of absurdity, skates to enable the Brazilians to enjoy wholesome exercise on the ice, in a region where a particle of frost or a flake of snow was never seen. However ridiculous and wasteful this may seem, these incongruous articles were not lost in a new country, where necessity and

ingenuity could apply things to a use, for which they were never intended by the sage exporters. The people did not suffocate themselves with woollen coverlets, where they sometimes found a cotton sheet too heavy and warm; they did not lay the blankets, therefore, on their own beds, but in the beds of their auriferous rivers and lavras, or gold washings. Here the long elastic wool entangled and intercepted the grains of gold that came down, till they became saturated, and so literally converted the blanket into a Golden Fleece. They had formerly used hides with the hair on, for the same purpose, and when the supply of blankets was exhausted, they returned to hides again. In the same way they applied the warming-pans to the uses of their engenhos, or sugar-houses: they knocked off the lids, and the bottoms made excellent skimmers, to collect the scum on the surface of the boiling sugar. Even the apparently hopeless and inconvertible skate, was turned to a useful purpose. Then, as well as now, there was nothing in the country so scarce as wrought iron, for shoeing mules and horses; and though ferradors, or smiths, are to be met at every rancho, ferraduras, or shoes, are seldom to be had. When the people, therefore, found they could not use these contrivances on their own,

they applied them to their horses' feet; and many an animal has actually travelled on English skates from Rio to Villa Rica. Such of them as were of well-tempered steel, were hammered into facas, or knives; and a gentleman told me, he found the iron of a skate in its original shape, forming the latch of a door in a village in the interior.

I frequently went down to the Custom-house to see these importations, but the season of skates and warming-pans was past. I saw, however, such immense quantities of other goods, that it seemed as if Sheffield and Manchester were employed in supplying Rio alone; and this you will readily conceive when I inform you, that the imports for the year 1828 amounted to more than three millions sterling, of which 2,200,000*l.* was from England alone in manufactured goods. The bustle and activity of the place, give a high idea of the commerce of Rio. A multitude of negroes are constantly employed, who labour without intermission the whole day, in removing packages of different kinds. They are generally lying open, either to be, or after having been examined; and it presents really a curious and interesting spectacle to pass along the courts and ware-rooms, through manufactures of every kind,

and from all parts of the globe ; but I particularly observed those from England, and I had the curiosity to note down some of the articles. There were bales and boxes on all sides lying open, filled with shawls, handkerchiefs, caps, cottons, ginghams, silks, boots, shoes, stockings, shirts, gloves, hats, dressing-boxes, looking-glasses, knives, hammers, hatchets, pins, needles, trowels, muskets, pictures, piano-fortes, barometers, drinking-glasses, mugs, jugs and decanters, with innumerable other articles of apparel or implements of handicraft or science, covering a space of an acre or two of ground, just arrived from the old, and about to be circulated and scattered over the mountains and forests of the new world.

Having waded through these, I mounted up stairs, and I saw a multitude of persons hard at work, as if it had been a large factory. These were the stampers:—every article, even to a single pair of gloves, stockings, or shoes, when the duty is paid, must be distinguished by this stamp. Three or four hundred persons were engaged in this work. One ran the thread through the corner of the stockings or shoes; another looped it to a little perforated pellet of lead; and a third pressed it flat by striking on it a stamp of the imperial arms.

Any article, however minute, that has not this attached to it, is liable to be seized as contraband; and such is the timidity or integrity of the Brazilians, that no inducement of profit would tempt them to purchase any thing, whose sale is not so sanctioned, even though it were offered at a fourth part of its real value. Hence it is that smuggling is almost unknown in the country. The duty, ad valorem, is so low, and the depreciation of the milrei so great, that it would be hardly worth while; or even if it were, the people are so scrupulous they would not purchase. The process of stamping every article, however, is so tedious and troublesome, that it is found to impede business very much, and the fees on the leaden stamp come to twice as much as the duty on the goods, in the cost of pieces of tape and other smaller things; so it is about to be discontinued, and some other mode adopted.

The salaries of custom-house people are so very small, that they are increased by means that render revenue officers in Brazil, more charged with corruption, than the same class in any other part of the world. Men, who are known to have a stipend of only two or three patacs, or about 3*s.* 6*d.* a-day, keep company, and live in a style which requires a large

revenue to support; and there are many ways of increasing their salaries, which are notoriously practised every day. When a vessel arrives full of wearing apparel, a preventive officer is put on deck, to watch that nothing is removed; several of his friends come to see him on board in shabby clothes, and they return on shore in a new dress, having left the old in the case behind them. Goods often lie for some time in the stores unclaimed; when opened, they are found to contain nothing but old things left in exchange, fit only for burning. Books are a common subject of depredation, and it is committed so ignorantly, that one or two volumes only are abstracted, and the set spoiled. A friend told me he had some lying in the stores, and when they were at length discharged, he got but two volumes of a work on chemistry which consisted of five,—and so on of the rest.

A circumstance of this kind occurred to a French gentleman, and the consul-general, Gestas, immediately applied for redress. The things abstracted were plates from a work which was useless without them; but he could obtain no satisfaction. He at length met Calmon, the minister of finance, and the Juiz d'Alfandega, and stated the case to them both. They retired, and in a short time the consul was referred to

the juiz. He said the affair was of such a nature, that he thought it would bring scandal on the establishment, but, at the same time, ought to be redressed; so he took the money at which the work was valued, out of his pocket, and offered it to the consul. He refused to compromise felony in that way; and wrote to the Marquez d'Aracaty, the minister for foreign affairs, stating the underhand offer made him, and demanding public redress. This was immediately afforded. The value of the purloined articles was given through the custom-house, the same channel as that through which the injury had been received; and the French, I am told, are ever since protected from similar injury.

This petty depredation, however, inflicting so great an injury, and affording so small a profit, was part of the system of universal peculation that was practised or permitted in the reign of the easy and good-natured Dom John, but is now fast disappearing, and better usages established.

Next to manufactured goods, flour is the great article of importation to an infant state, as incapable hitherto of growing the one, as of making the other. From eighty to ninety thousand barrels of flour are annually consumed at Rio and its dependencies, which are

almost exclusively supplied from the United States. Dried fish also is consumed in great quantities, as the great article of food in Lent and on fast-days, and nearly the whole of it is sent by the English from the banks of Newfoundland. Bees-wax, from the coast of Africa, for different religious purposes, is in immense demand, but it is generally brought in Brazilian ships. Soap is also much prized, that of the country being of a very vile quality, and generally like soft yellow clay. These, with Russian canvas and cordage, Swedish iron, Catalonia wine, the great consumption of the people, and India goods, form the principal part of the imports. It was the exclusive privilege of the Brazilians to import the last into the country, but by a decree of 1827, the commerce was thrown open to ships of all nations, paying a duty of 15 per cent. ad valorem. There are five East Indiamen trading from the harbour of Rio. The Brazilians have shown a similar liberality with respect to other monopolies. Formerly a company at St. Catherine's had the exclusive right to supply the country with whale oil. The trade of this also is now made free to all the world.

The great exports of the country are coffee, sugar, hides, horns, tobacco, cotton, and ipecacuanha.

Coffee is gathered twice in the year, in February and August, and comes to market in greatest abundance and of the best quality from July to December. It is purchased from the planters by a class of intermediate traders, who pack it in bags containing five arrobas, or 160 lbs., and is thus sold to the merchants; full confidence is placed in the weight, as no instance has occurred in which it was found defective, and the custom-house receives the duty without re-weighing. This is certainly creditable to the honesty of the Brazilians. In 1828, there were 58,871,360 lbs. exported.

Two qualities of sugars are known; one from Campos, in the north, and the other from Santos, in the south. They are brought in coasting vessels, in boxes weighing about 2000 lbs., and deposited in trapixes or public stores; a large quantity is also made in the district of Rio. The process is so well known, that you would think me tedious if I described it. In 1828 there were 19,126 cases, 465 boxes, and 13,867 barrels exported.

Hides and horns come from Rio Grande and the flat llanos on the shores of the Rio de la Plata. On the vast and fertile Campos of Brazil there are none, either wild or tame. In

1828, 207,277 hides, and a proportionable quantity of horns were exported.

Tobacco is principally for the Spanish market. The quantity exported in 1828 was 24,620 lbs. Cottons are sent from the Minas to Rio, but the quality is not so good as those from Pernambuco. The exports of 1828 were 2,440 serrons of 128 lbs. each.

England, France, Prussia, Hamburgh, and Bremen have commercial treaties with Brazil, and only pay 15 per cent. duty. All other nations pay 24.

When a vessel appears off the coast, she is seen at a considerable distance from the signal-hill, which, though near the middle of the city, commands a most extensive view into the Atlantic. A telegraphic communication is made of her size and quality, and the approach of every ship is known long before she arrives. In the convent of S. Bento and others, they have maps of signals, and amuse themselves with reading the telegraphic communications from the signal-hill, which is every where visible. A vessel may pass the fort of Santa Cruz, and enter the harbour at any hour of the night or day; but she must bring-to under the island of Villegagnon, and there be visited by the custom-house guard and the officers of health.

The number of foreign vessels which entered the harbour of Rio last year was as follows: English, two hundred and sixty-six; American, one hundred and fifty-one; French, thirty-nine; Swedish, fourteen; Danish, Dutch, and other nations, thirty-five; making in all five hundred and five foreign traders, carrying 151,500 tons; besides about ninety vessels of war. I stood one day on the hill of S. Bento, which commanded a view of the harbour, and I reckoned two hundred and sixteen vessels of all sizes lying in the bay, besides natives and small craft. It was a goodly sight to see the flags of all nations, floating together in amicable union, and the vessels freighted with the produce of all countries, and the industry of all people; and I looked back to the time, only a few years since, when jealousy and monopoly had excluded them all. I send you a paper on the present state of trade at Rio, communicated to me by my intelligent friend Mr. Price.*

The accounts of the country are kept in a small nominal coin called a rei, of which there are about five in an English farthing, or nine hundred and sixty in a dollar. There was once in circulation a coin, so low as a rei and a half;

* See Appendix, No. IV.

but the beggars in Lisbon, to whom they were always given, threw them, whenever they received them in charity, into the Tagus, and they have now all disappeared. I saw one in a gentleman's collection, and he esteemed it above price for its rarity.

When I was first presented with an account at Rio, I was startled at the number of figures till I was directed to strike off the last three, and the remainder was milreis, nearly equivalent to so many dollars.

The coins in circulation are—copper, a half vintem, ten reis; a vintem, twenty; a cobre, forty; four vintems, eighty; — silver, a half patacca, one hundred and sixty reis; a patacca, three hundred and twenty; two pataccas, six hundred and forty; a pataccoon, nine hundred and sixty;—gold, a four milrei piece, four thousand reis; a half doubloon, six thousand four hundred; a doubloon, twelve thousand eight hundred. All these have now disappeared, except the copper, although no specie is allowed to be exported from the country.

The great medium of circulation was notes, which were current only in the province of Rio; and in change for these, silver, when it could be had, bore a discount of sixty per cent. and even copper of twenty-five. This discount

on copper, the only coin in circulation, went on every day increasing; and when the news of the insurrection at Pernambuco arrived, it rose to fifty per cent.; the exchange rose in proportion, and a British sovereign passed for ten thousand reis.

The copper coin most in use, is a large piece of eighty reis, exceedingly ponderous and inconvenient to carry about. It was coined from sheet copper sent from England, but a great loss was sustained by the waste, which the Brazilians could make no use of; and an English merchant raised a fortune by purchasing it, and sending it again back to England to be recast into sheets, which again came out. This, however, has now been put an end to, and the people, grown wiser, get the metal from England already cut into the size of the coin, and it is then sent to the mint to be stamped with the Brazilian impress.

There had been a mint in Brazil so early as 1699, where they coined moedos, or four milrei pieces, two patac pieces, and vintems. In the year 1722, John V. ordered a copper coinage to be struck for Brazil, with the legend, *Pecunia totam circuit orbem;* and another, with *Æs usibus aptius auro.* The first is still to be seen on the vintems of Dom John VI.; and

the latter is a practical hint, which they have now adopted in its full extent. The present mint is modern; it forms part of the treasury which stands behind the theatre. It is a long low building; up a flight of stairs is a landing place, from whence are long galleries leading to different offices, and if I was to judge from the number of desks and clerks, it is a most extensive and active establishment. On the opposite side of a court-yard is the mint, where I saw men wheeling barrows full of circular pieces of copper just as they came from England, in at one door, and they issued out of another, as almost the only circulating coin. A few Spanish dollars are sometimes seen; their nominal value is 800 reis, but when they pass through this mint with the Brazilian impress, they pass for 960, without any increase of their intrinsic value.

Near the mint is the establishment for cutting diamonds, which may be considered part of the treasury. This consists of a large, bare, open building, like a stable, as public as the street, into which every body is admitted without question or inquiry. Along the walls, at each side, fourteen presses are arranged, with two horizontal wheels attached to each. The wheels are turned by negroes, and communicate with steel

cylinders, which they move round very rapidly. The diamond-cutter sits inside on a stool, with the cylinder turning before him. He beds the diamond in a composition of lead and tin, placed on the point of an iron handle. This he lays on the cylinder, which is previously prepared with diamond dust, and places on it a weight to press it down, with more or less force, against the revolving surface. Every man has three or four diamonds, which he takes out of press occasionally, and in succession, to observe how the process of cutting is going on.

Government sometimes sell the diamonds in the rough, but people always prefer buying them after they have been polished and prepared here, as their flaws and imperfections are then better seen after this process. They had just at that time advertised the sale of a lot of 400,000*l.* worth, prepared in this place. It seemed to me extraordinary that an establishment, where so much precious property is exposed, should be as open as a public market, where all comers are allowed to enter and walk about, and are suffered and, indeed, invited to handle and examine the diamond, during the process, without the smallest suspicion or interruption.

The influx of new inhabitants, in consequence of the increase of commercial enterprise, has

been very great, and the town has, in consequence, expanded in all directions. The old city was almost exclusively confined to the narrow space between the hills, extending from the Rua Direita to the Campo de Santa Anna. It now stretches nearly to Bota Fogo on one side, and to S. Christovão on the other, forming a cidade nova; and when the area within these limits is filled up with houses, the city of Rio will be as extensive as any in Europe. Nor is this at all improbable, at no very great distance of time. Already, in the memory of persons residing there, the most extensive and almost incredible accessions have been made to the city;—the whole of the space about the Campo de Santa Anna was a stagnant marsh; it is now drained, and covered with streets;—from the hill of the Gloria to the river Catete, was a sandy plain; it is now a large district of the town, full of houses;—the Mata Cavallos* was a rugged thicket, so called from its fatiguing horses; it is now a fine and extensive street;—and the Vallongo and its vicinity, since rendered infamous as the slave-market of the province, was not then in existence. The present extent

* Literally, kill-horse.—"Assim chamada por ser huma vereda cheia de barrancos, e que muito cançava os animaes."

R. W. ad lec. del.

on Stone by N. Whittock

S. SIDE OF THE ROCIO OR PRAÇA DA CONSTITUIÇÃO.

Printed by ... der, 14, Paternoster Row.

of the city may be estimated from the length of the streets. From the bridge of Catete to the convent of S. Bento, is a continued avenue of houses, deviating a little from a right line of nearly four miles. The style of building, however, is susceptible of great improvement. The houses in general are erected without any regard to uniformity, either in size or plan. The Rocio, or square, in which the theatre stands, is a remarkable instance of this; there are not to be seen in it two edifices of the same shape or dimensions.

The great impediment to the salubrity and increase of the town within convenient distances, is the steep hills which every where obstruct the line of streets. Some of these, however, are mounds of clay, which it would not be impossible to level, at least to an inclined plane, sufficiently accessible, for streets to pass over them. This is particularly the case with the hill of S. Antonio, which rises like a vast protuberance between the most populous parts of the town, completely interrupting the communication, unless by winding by a tedious circuit round the base. I was informed, it was in serious contemplation to attempt the removal of some part of the surface of this mound of earth, and build on the summit a square, with streets leading

up the sides, which would at once greatly contribute to the beauty, convenience, and salubrity of the city. This had been the plan of Dom John, whose first inquiry, on his arrival, was about the health of the place; and he wished that all future houses should be built on the hills.

In order to give you an idea of those localities, I had a plan of the town taken by actual survey, in which I myself partly assisted; I believe you may rely on it as approximating to a correct representation of the actual state of the city at present, as I had the houses reckoned, and the length of the streets measured. I shewed it, when it was finished, to the minister of the interior, who approved of it as correct. It is accompanied by references to the streets and public buildings.*

The houses are all numbered, and in a more convenient manner than ours. The odd numbers are marked on the right-hand side, and the even on the left; the passenger being always supposed to have his face towards the palace. This greatly abridges inquiry, as you always know the side of the street on which the house you want is to be found.

* See Appendix, No. V.

Formerly, the only light afforded to passengers at night proceeded from the tapers burning before the shrines of saints, at the corners of streets. Lamps, however, are now sufficiently numerous, and the town is as well provided as most cities on the continent of Europe. It has been, however, the general wish that gas should be substituted for oil. At the time of our arrival in Rio, a company was talked of; and on the 23d of October, 1808, a decree was issued for its formation, under the direction of Antonio da Costa, a Brazilian merchant. It is intended to light the city with 1500 lamps, suspended from iron posts, at distances not exceeding twenty fathoms, to be lighted every night when the moon did not shine, and continued till day-dawn, for which the government was to pay the company sixty contos of reis; the machinery to be imported duty free, but paid for and laid down at the expense of the company: lighting armazens, vendas, theatres, or other establishments, to be paid for in addition by the proprietors. Government purpose to give every facility and encouragement to the undertaking, and exempt all persons employed by the company from military service. If this gas be substituted in the churches for wax candles, it will be an immense

saving to the irmandades, and add considerably to the splendour of their illuminations.

Among the annoyances which tease a stranger in the streets of Rio, is the everlasting creaking of carts. The wheels are heavy blocks of wood, fixed to the extremities of a thick axle, and they turn both together. The extensive friction of the large revolving surface, which is never greased, against the shafts of the machine carrying a heavy load, not only greatly increases the difficulty of the draught, but causes a creaking sound, quite intolerable to unused ears. Every proprietor of a vehicle, offending in this way, is liable to a fine of six milreis; but they will not prevent it by any precaution, for they say the bullocks will not draw kindly without the noise they are accustomed to; and as this is a general prejudice, no one will exact the fine, except the emperor himself, who is anxious to put an end to the absurd nuisance. He always stops the creaking cart, levies the penalty, and puts the amount into his pocket.

The present population of Rio is a subject involved in considerable uncertainty. In 1648 it contained but 2,500 people. In 1811 an incorrect census was taken of the whole country, when the inhabitants were said to amount to three millions, and those of Rio to 46,944;

viz. 22,780 whites, 4,701 Indians, 9,888 free mulattos and blacks, and 14,276 mulatto and black slaves. This return was so carelessly made up, that the totals did not correspond with the particulars, as you perceive. Another census was taken about four years ago, but it also was notoriously defective; the war, at that time, was raging with Buenos Ayres, and the people made false returns, to evade the military conscription. The gross amount was however, I am told, supposed to be 130,000. I applied for information on this subject to the minister of the interior, and he informed me that government was then engaged in making an accurate census, which might be relied on; and he was so good as to promise me a copy of it, when it should be completed. I have not yet received it, and you must be content, for the present, with such conjecture as I can make from the data before me.

I find there are actually, by my enumeration, 15,623 inhabited houses in the town; and as the Brazilians are a prolific people, it is no exaggeration to allow six persons to a family, which would give nearly 100,000 inhabitants, supposing such a population as is to be found in a European town. The ratio of calculation, however, is very different at Rio, and, indeed, in every slave country. All the houses belong to

free persons, generally whites; but, besides their families, there are seldom less than three or four slaves in each. In some there are twenty; and a man was pointed out to me, in Bota Fogo, whose family consisted of six persons, and who had besides fifty blacks, all living in his house, which was not large. You will say, how is it possible that such a number of human beings could be accommodated? but a slave is a human being whose accommodation is never thought of. A bed or a blanket, much less a sleeping room, is out of the question. Sometimes, when he is inclined to indulgence, he procures for himself an old estera, or mat, which he lays any where; but generally the poor creatures throw themselves down on the floor of the hall, kitchen, or out-house; or, if the weather be cold, lie close to, or on the top of each other, to keep themselves warm, as you have often seen black pigs in a distillery yard. In passing through a hall I have observed them coiled up at the foot of the stairs, like dogs, and often mistaken them for such. In this way, small low houses, of one story, in Rio, which in Europe would not be supposed capable of containing more than the average of four or five persons, have ten or fifteen stowed in them. Many houses also are remarkably large, and let out in flats, like those

in Edinburgh, and each contains three or four families.

Almost all the persons who sell vegetables about the streets, and at stands, are free negroes. Some of them take houses in the becos, or blind alleys, off the streets, to which the rest resort for diet and lodging; a small room, twelve feet square, will hold ten or twelve of these negroes, whose apartment is confined to the space of the floor his extended body can occupy. Their bed is a mat, five feet by three, and the room is let out to as many mats as it will contain. The black population has latterly enormously increased. As the period approached for the total abolition of the slave trade, capital has been every where embarked in the purchase of negroes, insomuch so, that forty-five thousand were imported during the year 1828, into the city of Rio de Janeiro alone. It is true, that a great many of these are sent up the country; but it is also true, that a great proportion remains in the town, to supply the demands of the expanding white population, so that their increase has been beyond all ordinary calculation; my eye really was so familiarized to black visages, that the occurrence of a white face in the streets of some parts of the town, struck me as a novelty.

Of all strangers, the French form the most numerous population. Their first coming was a few, on the restoration of the Bourbons, in 1813; but in the year 1816, the American ship Calphe arrived, bringing from Havrê various French families. Among these were artists, who were to be professors of the new academy of arts and sciences, then proposed to be established by Dom John. They now form a community of about fourteen hundred persons, and their shops fill some of the principal streets, where they are the best furnished, and the most conspicuous. Curtains, mirrors, ornamental clocks, and enamelled China vases, principally distinguish them, and give an elegance and gaiety to the Rua d'Ouvidor, d'Ourives, and other places where they inhabit. They have a bazaar and about one hundred and forty shops, where all manner of trades are exercised, characteristic of the nation; boulangers, doreurs de metaux, emailleurs, fabriqueurs de liqueures, horlogers, lampistes, pâtissiers, tapissiers, &c. Besides these, there are thirty marchandes de modes, bijoutiers, chapelins, and other artistes, who ornament the person; and among the rest, above twenty marchands de nouveautés Françaises, sellers of French novelties, whose shops are filled with all manner of nondescript trinkets

and useless ornaments. They are also the only booksellers in Rio. There are twelve libraires and relieurs, some of whom keep circulating libraries, and have a good collection of books in all languages, and they publish the best newspaper in the capital.

The English, though they had the precedence in point of time, do not amount to more than half the number. Their houses make no display, nor have they any elegant shops which ornament the streets. Their goods are all packed up in warehouses, and are only exhibited in the shops of the Brazilians, with whom they generally settle every Saturday for the amount. They have lately established a circulating library, well supplied with all the new publications in Europe, and also a newspaper, which I believe is now discontinued.

From all these data, then, I am disposed to adopt the opinion of those with whom I conversed on the subject at Rio, that the present population of the town is nearly 150,000 persons, of whom two-thirds at least are blacks.

You will think, perhaps, that I have dwelt too long on a subject apparently of such little importance, as to the number of persons in this American town; but I consider it as the future great capital of a mighty empire; and I love

to dwell on " the state of its childhood," as we search with avidity in Europe for anecdotes of the infancy of great men. When it contains, as it probably will hereafter, a million or more of white freemen, they will be astonished to recollect, that once on a time two-thirds of the people were black slaves.

The manners of the people of Rio, though not polished, are kind and cordial. I had opportunities of witnessing those of all ranks. Immediately after our arrival, we dined with Baron Mareschal, the Austrian plenipotentiary, where I met the whole of the ministry, and other distinguished Brazilians. They were men generally of low stature, and had not the least appearance or pretension of a similar class in Europe. The greater number had been engaged in business, and being men of opulence when the separation of the countries took place, naturally stepped into those situations, formerly occupied by strangers of rank from the parent country. They were men of the plainest manners, laughing, good-humoured, and accessible, like common-councilmen at a London feast. Their dress, however, was rich and expensive; and some of them wore large golden keys, attached like small swords to their sides, intimating that they performed the office of chamberlain to

his Majesty. Among them was a little man, with a sharp pock-marked visage, formerly a jeweller, but now the *arbiter elegantiarum* of the court. He holds no official situation, but has attained the same influence over the Emperor that Halet Effendi possessed over the Sultan when I was at Constantinople. He is familiarly called in Rio, Chalassa, a local term, synonimous I believe with *bon vivant*.

Shortly after I was at a ball given by M. Pontois, the French Chargé d'Affaires, where I saw the ladies who composed the beau monde of Rio, dancing waltzes and quadrilles. They, like the men, were remarkably low of stature, with sallow complexions, and dark eyes and hair. The latter was dressed remarkably high, and ornamented with various productions of the country; among these were the shells of a very beautiful species of beetle, of a rich vivid green, more bright and lustrous than the finest emerald. They danced well, and their manners were very affable and unaffected.

The shopkeepers of Rio are rather repulsive in their address, and so little disposed to take trouble, that a customer is often induced to leave the shop, by the careless way in which he is treated. They are exceedingly fond of sedentary games of chance, such as cards and

draughts, and often engage at them on their counters. I have sometimes gone in at those times to purchase an article, and the people were so interested in their game, that they would not leave it to attend to me and sell their goods. They are, however, honest and correct in their dealings, and bear good moral characters. Their charity is boundless, as appears by the sums expended on different objects by the irmandades or brotherhoods which they form. They are, as far as I have heard, generally speaking, good fathers and husbands, and their families are brought up with strictness and propriety. It is pleasing to see them walking out together, the corpulent parents going before, and the children and domestics following in their orders. The women are fond of black, wear no caps, but a black veil is generally thrown over their bare heads, which hangs down below their bosom and back; and as it is generally worked and spotted, it makes their faces look at a little distance, as if they were covered with black patches. They always wear silk stockings and shoes, and are particularly neat and careful in the decorations of their feet and legs, which are generally small and well-shaped. The boys of this rank are remarkably obliging; when I saw any thing among them that seemed curious, and I ex-

pressed a wish to look at it, they always pressed it on my acceptance with great good nature, and seemed pleased at an opportunity of gratifying me.

The Brazilians, in any difficulty or danger, make vows to perform certain acts, in token of their gratitude to Providence if they are extricated. These vows they religiously keep, and they are sometimes productive of great unhappiness. The patrona, or master of a boat, in which I used to cross the bay, was a remarkably good-looking man. He was once overtaken by a storm in the same place, and made a solemn vow, that if he reached the shore, he would marry the first disengaged woman he met. He faithfully kept his word; connected himself with a person he knew nothing about, who proved to be a vile character, and his domestic comforts are for ever embittered.

They are not indisposed to hospitality, and they constantly accept invitations from strangers, but seldom ask them in return. This arises from the exceeding deficiency of their domestic economy. A Brazilian never keeps a store of any thing in his house; but even those of the highest rank send to a neighbouring venda for whatever they want, in the smallest quantities, and only when they want it. They

never purchase more at a time than a pint of wine, or a few ounces of sugar or coffee; and this, they say, is, because if they laid in a store, it would be impossible to prevent their slaves from getting at, and consuming it. When the slave goes for the article, he takes up any thing he can lay his hand on to carry it in. I have often seen one of them returning from a venda with a china tureen full of charcoal under his arm, and a silver cup on his head, holding a few loose candles.

Some trades are associated in a manner seemingly as incongruous. On many shops you see written *vidros e xa*, glass and tea: intimating that the shopkeeper is both a glazier and a grocer. Some, however, are latterly approximating to a more natural association, and have added china to their glass, and so sell both tea and tea-cups.

The avocations of barbers are also very various. They vend and prepare tortoiseshell to make combs. They bleed and draw teeth as usual; and so far are only employed in business connected with their calling, as barber-surgeons. But besides that, they exclusively mend silk stockings, and are remarkable for the neatness with which they sole and vamp them. I never passed a barber's shop that I did not see

him, when not otherwise engaged, with a black silk stocking drawn on one arm, and his other employed in mending it. They are, besides, the musicians of the country, and are hired also to play at church doors during festivals. All the persons who compose the bands on these occasions are barbers. Over the middle of every shop is an arch, on which are suspended the different articles for sale. In a barber's shop, the arch is always hung round with musical instruments. This association of trades was formerly the usage in England, when the lute and cithern were always found in a barber's shop, to amuse the customers of better condition, who came to be trimmed, as they are now presented with a newspaper; or sometimes to alleviate the pains of a wound, which the barber, in his avocation of surgeon, was probing or dressing. But the remains of those customs which have entirely gone out in Europe, still linger in America among the descendants of those who originally brought them over.

It is highly creditable to the citizens of Rio, that no native beggars are ever seen in their streets. The only persons of that class I ever was accosted by, were foreign sailors, particularly English and North Americans, who often

attacked me, complaining rudely that they were out of employment; they had all the appearance of being worthless intemperate fellows, whose poverty was their own fault. All the natives in distress are fed and clothed by the different irmandades of citizens, or by the convents; and it is a pleasing sight to see the steps of religious edifices filled, at stated times, with poor people disabled by age or infirmity, and the good Samaritans walking among them, distributing food and raiment as they require it.

It is also much to be commended, that no women of bad character are ever seen in the streets, either by day or night, so as to be known as such. The decency and decorum of this large town, in this respect, is particularly striking to those who have been accustomed to the awful display of licentiousness, which besets them in the streets and public places of Paris and London.

Opposite the Misericordia is the Foundling Hospital, where all the poor exposed children are received without question or inquiry. There stands below, about the middle of the edifice, a semicircular box, like that which formerly stood at the gate of the Foundling Hospital in Dublin, called the cradle. On pulling a

bell beside it, this is thrust out, the child is deposited, and the cradle is drawn in, without any question asked. When received into the house, they are considered as orphans, and under the care of the Orphan Society; they are educated to a competent age, and then bound out to trades. Twice in the year people come to select them, and receive a considerable fee with them.

By an alvará of the 31st of January, 1775, all young slaves exposed were to be brought up free; but this was forgotten, and some persons afterwards claimed such poor children, and received them on paying the expense of their education. This was justly considered a gross violation of the alvará; and on the 22d of February, 1823, a decree was issued, declaring that it was most inhuman, and repugnant to the spirit of existing law, that these foundlings, abandoned by their masters, and educated at the public expense, should be again reduced to slavery. It was therefore declared that they must be considered as orphans, brought up as citizens, and enjoy all the privileges that belong to free men, without any impediment whatsoever.

It seems an extraordinary anomaly, that the

circumstance which, in other countries, sinks the illegitimate outcast into the lowest ranks of society, should have raised him to a respectability which he would never attain, perhaps, had he not been base born and a foundling. Such is the operation of slavery; the bastard becomes a free citizen, and the legitimate child continues a bondsman.

The number of children annually received is, on an average, from seventy to eighty; and the whole number remaining in the institution at the same time about five hundred.

There are neither taverns nor tea-gardens, nor any such places of intemperance or amusement at Rio; the only means of enjoyment and association, besides their churches, are the public gardens and the theatre.

The garden called the Passeio Publico, or Public Walk, is situated on the sea-shore. From the front of the Calabouça, to that of N. S. da Gloria, is a fine sweep of strand; and near the middle of the arch, the public garden was laid out by the Viceroy Vasconcellos, a name to which Rio seems much indebted. It consists of broad walks, bordered with large trees, some native and some foreign, forming a dense and delightful shade, and enclosing compartments

within, set with fruit or flowering trees and shrubs. Among the former are mangas,* yambos,† and grumixams,‡ yielding, in their seasons, a vast quantity of delicious fruit, which every one is allowed to gather and eat. Among the latter is the poinciana,§ a species of Brazil wood, whose yellow and orange flowers are exceedingly beautiful, the coral-tree,‖ with long spikes of scarlet flowers, as large as those of the horse-chestnut, and the magnificent bombax,¶ covered at one time with a profusion of large purple flowers, like rich tulips, and at another with huge pendant pods of silk. Near the middle of the garden is an octagon temple, intended for a botanical lecture room, where the professor explained the structure and qualities of the various plants in the garden; it is now, however, entirely out of repair.

This place would be a delightful retreat, were it not for a large mound which they have thrown up in front, excluding not only the fine prospect of the bay, but the pure and wholesome breezes which would otherwise ventilate the walks. The sea, as if indignant at this barbarous taste, has beaten down the mound with the heavy surge

* Mangofera Indica.
† Eugenia yambos.
‡ Myrtus lucida.
§ Cæsalpinia pulcherrima.
‖ Erythryna corallodendron.
¶ Bombax erianthos.

that rolls in here; but they have now effectually secured it with a heavy foundation of blocks of granite, and, I am sorry to say, there is no chance of its being carried away. Before the mound are two triangular obelisks of granite; on one is the inscription, AO AMOR DO PUBLICO; on another, A'SAUDADE DO RIO.* The sum of 1,905,000 reis are allowed to keep it up.

Every evening, this garden is crowded with citizens and their families, who ascend the mound to breathe the sea air, which is shut out from the garden. Here I often sat, and had the opportunity of observing to some Brazilian friends, the great regularity of a phenomenon very common on sea shores, but which has never been satisfactorily accounted for. Three waves always followed one another, in regular succession, and then a comparatively calm interval succeeded, till the receding water collected sufficient for three more, and so on at regular periods. The first wave was low and weak, the second somewhat stronger, but the third of considerable size, curling into an arch, seven or eight feet in perpendicular height, and then descending with uncommon violence, shaking and shattering the whole mound; as

* For the public love—For the health of Rio.

if we could suppose one side of a bridge to be lifted up, and the edge let fall violently on its abutment.*

Besides this public garden in the city, there is another at some distance, much more extensive. In the year 1809, a vessel brought to Rio a number of Portuguese prisoners, from the Île de France; and in the same ship, twenty cases of Oriental plants, which had been formerly transplanted from the East Indies, and assimilated to the climate of the island by the French. Among these, were camphors, cloves, mangoes, and other fruits and spices, heretofore unknown in Brazil. These were immediately placed in the royal gardens, at the Lagoa de Frietas, where they soon accommodated themselves to the soil and climate, and from thence young plants were transferred to

* The mechanical cause of this is easily assigned. The first wave flows evenly on, meeting with no obstruction from reflux water; the second is somewhat impeded in its advance by the retiring current of the first; and the waves meeting, cause both to ascend into a ridge; but the third and last meeting with the obstruction of the other two united, can only force its way by suddenly inflating and overcoming the former, which it does by ascending up the mound it raises, and tumbles over the other side, like a cataract rushing over a ledge of rocks. It is this third wave that upsets boats passing the bars of rivers; and it was this that battered down part of the mound of the Passeio Publico. Why it is always the third, and not any other number, it is not easy to account for.

other places in the country. In the year 1810, a number was brought also, from the celebrated gardens of Gabriella, in Cayenne, which was then occupied by the Portuguese, and transferred to the same garden. Shortly after, tea was introduced from China, and a colony of natives invited over to superintend the cultivation; and, in order to encourage and extend the growth and cultivation of these foreign plants, all spices, and other productions of exotics, were exempt for ten years from all tenths, and import and export duties.

The garden where these were placed, is situated about eight miles from Rio, and the road leading to it is very delightful. It passes along the beautiful bay of Bota Fogo, and by the fine lake of Rodrigo de Freitas, where one side is bounded by the magnificent ridges of the Corcovado, and the other, by the romantic headlands of the bay and lake. The garden is a rich flat, comprising about fifty acres, divided into compartments by avenues of exotics, among which the Sumatra nut* is the most conspicuous. It is of rapid growth, yields abundance of shade with its ample leaves, and such a profusion of fruit, that the walks were covered

* Vernicia montana.

with large nuts, which give an immense quantity of oil, for various useful purposes. Next in abundance, is the bread-fruit,* which thrives with equal luxuriance, bearing among its immense foliage, a spherical fruit, in size, shape, and colour, like pendulous loaves of bread. But the compartment most interesting, is the tea plantations. These occupy several square plots, of about half an acre each, but do not seem to have answered the expectations formed of them. The shrubs are stunted, cankered, and moss-grown, and the Chinese, to whose care they were originally entrusted, have abandoned them; the colony is dispersed; and, with the exception of a few, met occasionally in the streets of Rio, none are to be seen.

Though experience has proved how well adapted are the soil and climate of this place for the propagation of every exotic, and for naturalizing it in the country, the wise and beneficial intentions of Dom John, seem not to have been carried into effect. No tea is to be procured, either from the plantations here, or at Santa Cruz, where it was also tried on an extensive scale. Every person is invited

* Artocarpus incisa.

to take plants from the garden, and the only expense is, a small gratuity to the negroes of the establishment, for the baskets they weave, in which specimens of any kind are sent to all who apply for them. It is called a botanic garden, but has slight pretensions to the name. There are very few of the immense variety of indigenous plants to be found here, and not the smallest attempt is made at classification, or scientific arrangement. The garden, in fact, is little more than a retreat, where people retire to, to walk and take refreshment. Our friends, Messrs. Aston and Abercrombie, entertained their acquaintances in an edifice attached to it, and which is generally procured for the purpose. Among other rarities, our tea in the evening was the produce of the plantation here, and it was the only time when I, or any of the company, I believe, had tasted it. The sum of 2,902,000 reis, is annually allowed for its support.

The citizens of Rio are also very fond of the opera. Some circumstances connected with it, however, greatly offended the serious. The house was erected in the Rocio, not far from the Largo de Francisco de Paula, where they were at the same time building a large church. As they were in a great hurry to finish the

new theatre, they not only stopped the building of the church, but actually took part of it down, and applied the materials towards completing the other edifice, which was opened with great pomp in 1813, on the 12th of October, the birth-day of the Prince of Beira. This sacrilegious dilapidation of a church, to finish a theatre, shocked, as it ought, the serious citizens, and they predicted some awful accident to the unholy edifice. Some years after, it was burnt down, and the good people are firmly persuaded it was a judgment, to warn and chastise the impiety of the builders. The theatre, however, rose again, like a phœnix from its ashes, but the church remains in the same dilapidated state, torn down nearly to its foundation.

One circumstance, nevertheless, has endeared the opera to the Brazilians; it is the place where all the political events of the country, in which they are so deeply interested, were announced and completed; and that association alone, is sufficient to draw them there, independent of good music and dancing. The emperor is passionately fond of it, and is a constant attendant, often with all his children. He has a large box, which occupies the breadth of the building. This is generally filled with

his chamberlains, and other officers, who stand behind him, while he sits in front. The enthusiasm, however, with which he was generally received here, has passed away, and, whenever I have been present, his entrance was never greeted with any mark of applause. During Lent, the theatre is closed, and the people are amused with spectacles of a different kind, in the churches and processions. The English frequently get up plays, for charitable purposes, in the intervals of the opera.

The theatre is partly supported by lotteries, and the irmandades, of different orders, increase their funds by the same means; so that lotteries are so frequent, as to be almost perpetual in Rio. The benefits are, twelve per cent. on the amount of the tickets, which is usually about 7,500, at twenty milreis each, of which 5,000 are blanks, and 2,500 prizes. The value of the tickets is 150,000 milreis, from which a deduction of twelve per cent. would produce 18,000 milreis for the contractors, leaving 132,000 for prizes; the highest of which is 20,000, and the lowest twenty. Schemes for these lotteries, in aid of funds, either for charity or amusement, are every day posted in the streets, or in shops, and the tickets are always soon disposed of, because

the prizes are always honourably paid, and there is no instance of any defalcation, though they are merely conducted on the credit of individuals. Many of the English speculate, and some have gained considerable prizes.

The post-office is held immediately under the hall of the chamber of deputies, and is part of the same building. The post leaves Rio every ten days, for the different remote places in the interior. Mail coaches are of course unknown, but I have frequently met the post on the road. It is carried by two negroes, with poles in their hands, and a long portmanteau strapped across each of their backs. They travel on foot, at the rate of a league or four miles an hour. They proceed without any kind of guard, and with a feeling of such perfect security, that I have seen their portmanteaus of letters lying by the road side, without any one to watch them, while they themselves had gone to some distant rancho or venda to get refreshment, yet I never heard that the mail had been robbed.

When it arrives at the post-office in Rio, the letters are not sent about, except to mercantile houses, which pay a certain sum for the advantage; other letters are advertised. The office is a large hall on the ground floor, and it is

hung round with boards, on which are written the names of places from which letters come, at the head of a column; and underneath the names of persons to whom they are addressed. The columns are numbered; and when a person expects a letter, he applies, not to the office but to the board, and if he finds his name there, he takes the number opposite to it, which he presents at the office; and he gets, not a letter directed to his address, but one correspondent to the number he asks for, which is often for another person. When any mistake arises, and he gives his name, a parcel of letters is presented to him, and he takes which he pleases.

Much inconvenience arises from this practice. Many people, from curiosity or a worse motive, take the letters that do not belong to them; and every day there are advertisements in the Diario, from some who could not find a packet they expected, or from others who had taken what did not belong to them, and requesting the owners to call for them. I had the curiosity to count the letters on the board lying to be called for on a particular day, and I found them as follows:—From England and France, 167; Lisbon, 5,860; Oporto, 1,166; Asia, 55; Bengal, 106; Angola, 834; Mosambique, 153;

Fayal, 100; Monte Video, 133; Maranhão, 392; Campos, 542; St. Paul's, 814; Swiss Settlement, 40; St. Catherine's, 203; Ilha Grande, 244; Minas Geraes, 3,630; Bahia, 1,311; Pernambuco, 1,052; Rio Grande, 1082; Figueira, 1,114; torn letters, 406; total, 18,414.

The administration of justice in Brazil, is perhaps the greatest grievance under which the people labour; and the emperor's frightful picture of it, in recommending it to the consideration of the Chambers, was not exaggerated. The judges have but a small stipend of about three hundred milreis, and they expend an income of ten thousand; the difference is made up by the most notorious and undisguised bribery, in which there is no delicacy used, and little concealmeant practised. A respectable merchant informed me, he had just gained an important but hopeless suit, by bribing the judge who tried it with an English carriage, and he was not ashamed to drive about in this public proof of his corruption.

There is one tribunal, however, to which the people have access, which is above the suspicion of such mercenary influence, and that is the throne of the emperor himself. On every Saturday morning a public levee is held, where the humblest individual in society may in

person claim redress. The only qualification required for admission is, that the applicant shall come with a cocked-hat. If he cannot command one, he leaves such as he has behind him at the door, and boldly approaches to the throne, where he is heard and redressed.

Some very extraordinary scenes take place on these occasions. I shall mention one of the many which I heard. A well-known character, of considerable rank and consequence, had become enamoured of the wife of a Juiz da Fora, who rejected his addresses. Shortly after, her husband was assassinated, and this act was attributed to him, who supposed her attachment to her husband had stood in the way of his illicit suit. Under this impression, the widow immediately repaired to court to seek redress at this public levee. As soon as she was admitted, she threw herself at the feet of Dom John VI., told her story, and demanded justice, which the monarch immediately promised her. Engaged at the time in very embarrassing affairs, the king overlooked the circumstance, and forgot his promise; when the widow appeared before him again in deep mourning. Struck with the circumstance, he now confirmed his assurance with an oath, that she should have justice; but the friends of the accused being

at that time about the person of the king, it is supposed his attention was again turned purposely from the subject. A third time the widow appeared, and taking from under her veil a shroud, she displayed and shook it before him, told him, in the bitterest language, he must soon come to wear it, and bade him call to mind what was the punishment reserved in the next world for perjured sovereigns, who denied justice to their subjects. The well-meaning, but timid monarch, was deeply affected by this denunciation, and in great horror of mind, assured her of immediate redress; but the widow died in a very short time after, Dom John was recalled to Portugal, and the affair was never investigated.

The police are a large body dressed like soldiers, with blue jackets and cross belts of buff leather, and resemble exactly the gendarmes of France. They are not distinguished either for temperance or proper conduct, and they are the only natives I ever saw drunk. If an outrage is committed, they seize, not the man who perpetrated it, who generally has time to escape, but the person they find nearest the spot, who is only accidentally passing. A man was ridden over by a horse just at our door, and brought into the hall in a dangerous state.

The police came up and seized a gentlemanly person who was walking by at the time. It was in vain he pleaded he could not ride over the man, for he had no horse. He was, nevertheless, dragged off to the police-house.

Some curious circumstances attend the execution of a criminal here. When he is condemned, he is taken under the protection of the irmandade of the Misericordia, and placed by them in a capella for three days, where he is visited by persons who provide all comforts and conveniences for his unfortunate situation; and among other things, they prepare for him a shirt. The number eleven is a proverbial offence, when applied to an individual, both at Lisbon and Rio. At the former, to say of another, he is a man de onze lettras, is an insult, because the name of a very odious character is spelled with eleven letters. At the latter, it is equally offensive to say, he is a man de onze varas, "of eleven ells," as it implies a man condemned to an ignominious death; the last preparation for which is, putting on his shroud or shirt of eleven yards. The irmandade also provide the cord by which he is executed. This last they sometimes immerse in some strong acid, by which it is corroded, and rendered so incapable of supporting a weight, that it

frequently breaks before the criminal is dead. When this happens, they step in, wave a standard over the body, and claim it as their right. This is admitted, and they are allowed to bear it away, and so frequently restore suspended animation.

There are many persons in Rio, who realize a considerable income by taming refractory slaves. A shoemaker of this class lately purchased two. He was a man of the most unrelenting severity, and treated them so cruelly, that they fell on him one evening in his shop, with their knives, and killed him. There was something in the affair, that interested the irmandade to so great a degree, that in a fit of mistaken mercy, they offered the widow eight contos, if she would not prosecute the slaves. The attachment of women in Brazil to the memory of their husbands is proverbially strong, so she rejected every offer, and surrendered the assassins to justice. In all executions, it is the practice for the executioner to stand on the ladder above the criminal; and when the clergyman comes to the sentence in the creed, "I believe in Jesus Christ," the ladder is turned, the hangman leaps on the culprit's neck, and they swing off together. On this occasion the rope, which had been previously prepared,

immediately broke with the double weight, and they both fell to the ground. The irmandade now stepped in, waved their flag, and demanded the body. The juiz, who presided, was a determined man; he told them to take the body if they pleased, as it was their right, but first he would order the head and hands to be chopped off. As this would totally defeat their object, they declined removing the man; and he was again hanged up, taken down apparently dead, and lay beside the gallows, while the sentence of the law was executed on his companion; but before this was concluded, animation returned, and he was observed to kick and struggle on the ground. He was again, therefore, tied up till life was entirely extinct; and is perhaps the only person on record, who was thus executed three times for the same offence.

The Brazilians were greatly shocked at this; and when the widow, who was reduced to poverty by her husband's death, went to solicit alms to purchase prayers for the repose of his soul, she was very coldly received by every one. They forgot her disinterestedness, in refusing a large sum to compromise the murder of her husband, and they only remembered her unchristian feeling of revenge, they said, on his murderers.

Funerals are among the most pompous and gaudy displays of the people. Those of the better class are always conducted by night, by the light of large wax tapers, the size of flambeaux. These are borne, not only by the friends of the deceased, but by any passing stranger of respectable appearance. For this purpose, one of the conductors generally stands at the door of the house in which the corpse lies, and invites the passenger to come in and take a taper. Every week, at least, I have been in this way arrested as I passed by, and as it is deemed not good manners to refuse, I latterly learned to pass over to the other side, to avoid the necessity of either complying or declining.

The coffin is carried before, and the taper bearers follow in a long procession behind to the church, where the funeral service is read. It is there laid on a catafalk, or pedestal, which stands for that purpose in the middle of every aisle: priests attend, who chant the funeral service, accompanied by the organ; and when this is concluded, either the flooring of the church is raised and the body deposited beneath, or it is brought to the cloisters, where a small receptacle, like an oven, is opened to receive it. Before it is so deposited, the lid of the

coffin is raised, and a quantity of quick lime thrown in; and when it is decomposed by this process, the bones are shut in with a lock and key. Notwithstanding their preservation of the bones of the dead, the people are remarkably careless of the remains of their deceased friends. Their only concern is, that they shall receive the last rites of their church, which they consider indispensable to the welfare of their souls. Few or no relations are present at the interment; and there is a great indifference, amounting to levity, not only among the acquaintance who attend the funeral, but among the clergy themselves.

On some occasions of the funerals of infants, the coffin is an elegant embroidered trunk, in which the child lies enveloped in artificial flowers; and when placed on the catafalk, it looks like a work-box on a lady's dressing table. The cloisters where they are deposited are remarkably dry and neat, kept always fresh with paint and whitewash, and generally in a pretty garden embellished with parterres and aromatic flowering shrubs; so that the charnel-house is divested of every thing offensive or even dismal, and redolent with incense and perfumes.

The gaiety of this is strongly contrasted with the funerals of negroes. Their naked bodies are

met every day, thrown into an old mat suspended on a pole between two others, their arms and legs often hanging down and trailing on the ground. They are brought in this way to the large cemetery attached to the Misericordia Hospital; and here they are thrown into a long trench, where I have seen ten or twelve bodies lying in a heap without any covering of earth yet thrown on them.

When the person is deposited under the flooring of the church, a very offensive spectacle is often exhibited. The ground is so crammed that it is impossible to find room, and the aperture made is not sufficient to contain it; so that when the naked corpse is laid down, part of it is often seen rising above the ground. A man then takes a rammer, like a pavior's, and deliberately pounds the body into a flat mass, till it is accommodated to its situation; while all the people look on with the most perfect indifference. It is true that it is divested of all feeling, as a Brazilian sensibly remarked to me when I mentioned the circumstance, and deserves to be held in no more estimation than the clay with which it is about to incorporate. But certainly the spectacle is very revolting, and the odour dangerously offensive; and many people are compelled to leave the church from a

sense of sickness. In some churches, as I have before mentioned, the toes and foreheads protrude above the ground.

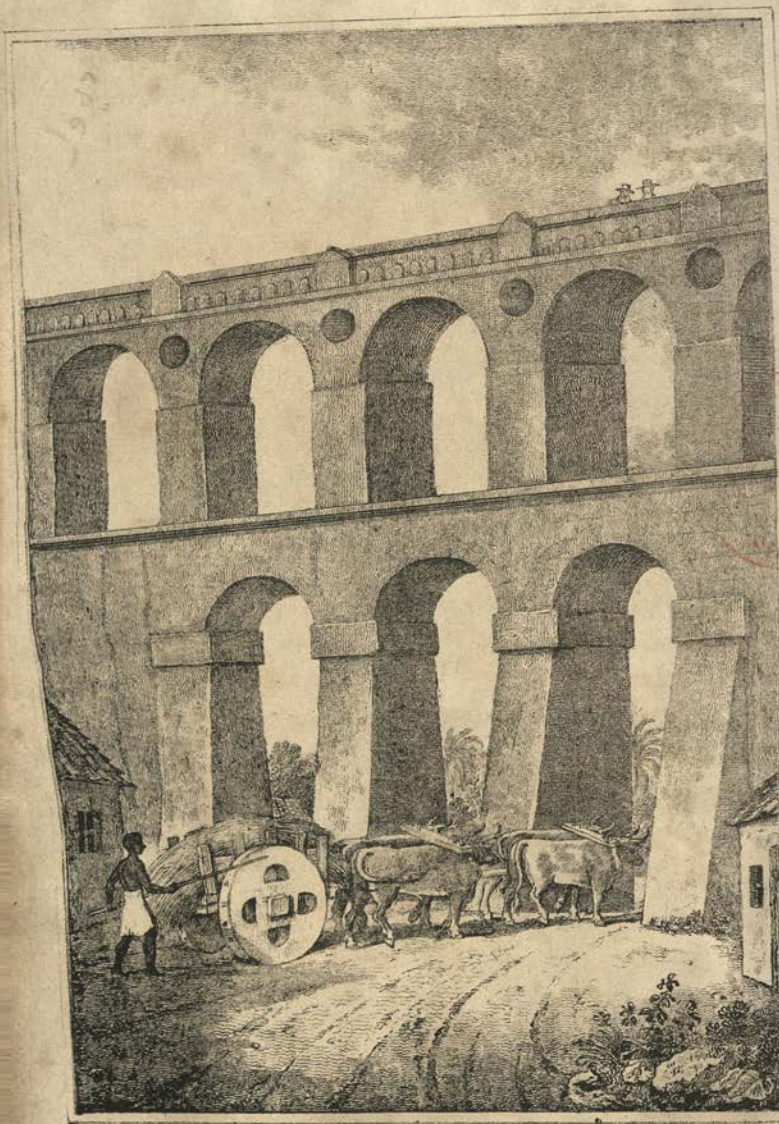
The provision of wax tapers for the friends of the deceased is so essential, that frequent advertisements appear in the journals, apologizing for there not being enough to accommodate all who came. In the "Journal de Commercio," of the 15th November, 1828, I saw a notice from a João Bernardo Neguero, importing, that "being obliged to bury his grandfather, Major Antonio Ramos, he had invited various persons to attend the funeral, and was greatly concerned to find that tapers had not been provided for them all. This neglect was to be attributed to the Andador of Santa Rita, who had agreed to furnish them; and he had no doubt that the same Andador had every wish to do so; but as he had buried a monkey a few days before, by taper light, in consecrated ground, he had consumed all the wax, and so had disappointed his friends."

The most conspicuous object seen from all parts of Rio and the neighbourhood, is the Corcovado mountain, not less striking for the magnificent singularity of its appearance, than for its importance and utility to the citizens. It is the great reservoir which supplies them

with water. I visited this mountain with a party of friends, among whom were Captain King, of the Adventure discovery ship, just returned from surveying the coast of Patagonia, and Captain Fitzroy. We began to ascend from the Laranjeira, and proceeded up the very steep sides, through primeval woods, which never have been cut down. From this belt of forests the peaked summit emerges, rude and bare, where vegetation had ceased, and nothing was to be seen but a stunted cactus issuing from a fissure. The peak is rent by a deep chasm, and, as a flag-staff set up here had been splintered by lightning, it is supposed that the same cause had rifted the rock. On this wild eminence a guard-house had been erected, and the chasm passed by a wooden bridge. It was intended as a police station to hunt out fugitive slaves, who took refuge in this formerly inaccessible mountain, but it is now abandoned and fallen into decay. Captain Fitzroy had climbed up here the night before and taken observations, while similar ones were made below by Captain King, and the result of them was, that the highest point is 2,329 feet above the level of the sea.

The vapours raised from the Atlantic, as they float along, are intercepted by this lofty peak,

round which they collect and congregate in the form of dense mists, during the greater part of the year, and descend in numerous rills down the sides, particularly on the north, or that which faces Rio. Here they unite into a considerable torrent, which bursts from the masses of wood, which had hitherto concealed it, into light, and tumbles with a copious cataract on the summit of a ridge of lower hills, about three miles from the city. The water comes down pure, limpid, and cold, over a ledge of granite rock, in a broad sheet, into a natural reservoir; and, from hence, in the year 1719, it was led by an aqueduct, constructed by Albuquerque, the captain-general of the province, along the ridge, to the convent of Santa Theresa. Nothing can be conceived more picturesque and beautiful, than the road formed to conduct this water. It is a green level avenue of considerable breadth, winding its way through primeval woods over the before inaccessible ridges, on the summit level of these romantic hills, forming in different places artificial terraces and platforms; whence the traveller looks down from his airy height, on each side of him, on some of the most lovely views in nature. Beside him is the water gurgling along in its stony channel, covered above, but open at intervals, to afford him the



R. W. ad loc. del.

N. Whittock Lithog.

AQUEDUCT

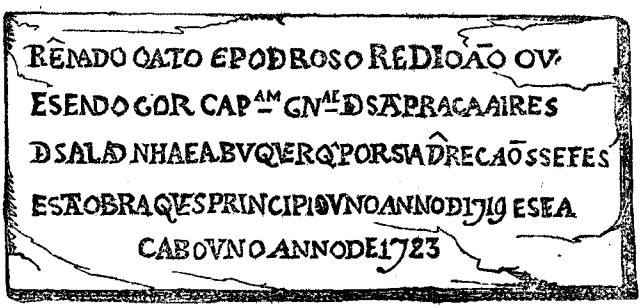
Printed by G. W. Lander, 14 Paternoster Row.

means of using it; here he sees it eddying in broad granite reservoirs, presenting the most cool and refreshing object that can be conceived. Near Santa Theresa, where I often climbed to take a morning or evening walk, is one of these artificial terraces; it passes a valley which opens to the sea, and looks down on a part of the city; and I believe I may say, without exaggeration, that there is not in the world so noble a combination of art and nature, as the prospect it presents.

From hence, over a magnificent arcade, the water is conducted across the valley to the opposite hill of S. Antonio. This arcade was completed in 1750, by order of John V., by Gomez Andrade, captain-general of the province. It is constructed of two ranges of arches, which rise from the ground, one over the other, to the height of eighty palms; the lower extends to the length of 100, but the upper 140 fathoms, and consists of forty-two arches. On the latter range the aqueduct is formed, conveying the water to the opposite hill, whence it descends to the lower parts of the city. It is first received into a reservoir in the form of a tower, which communicates with a fountain in the largo or square of the Carioca.

This fountain is a semicircular edifice, ap-

proached by five steps, having eleven brass pipes in front, from which the water is constantly pouring. The surplus runs off, and is received in a large tank of hewn stone, where horses drink, and black women wash clothes. On a tablet in front is the following inscription,* the oldest, perhaps, to be met with in the country, and affording a specimen of the rude, and almost occult, mode of writing a century ago in Brazil:—


REINADO DO ATO EPODEROSO REI DIOÃO OV
ESENDO GOR CAPAM GNAL DSA PRACA AIRES
DSALD NHA EABVQVERQ POR SUA DRECAÕ SSEFES
ESTAOBRAQSE PRINCIPIOV NO ANNO DI 1719 ESEA
CABOVNO ANNO DE 1723

The traits of Brazilian manners, which occur at this fountain, are, perhaps, more striking to a stranger, than any others which present themselves in Brazil; and convey such an idea of peculiarity, that the term Carioca is applied to

* "In the reign of the high and powerful King Dom John the Fifth, Ayres de Saldanha and Albuquerque, being governor and captain-general of this place, by his directions this work was made, which was begun in the year 1719, and completed in the year 1723."

a citizen of Rio in the same sense as cockney to a citizen of London. Vast numbers of blacks of both sexes are employed, either in carrying water, or washing clothes; and this is their great point of assembling. On one side, ranged along the wall, are three or four rows of men sitting on their cans, with two or three police-men shaking scourges over them to keep them in order; nearer to the fountain are two or three more, in the same position, sitting in a large semicircle; on the steps of the fountain is a crowd, with cans, scrambling to get at the pipes. As their cans are filled, and they leave vacancies, the police-men scourge up a range of the sitters to supply their place, which in turn is closed up by those behind, and so a constant movement goes on. The tank at the other side is filled with women of all colours washing clothes, standing in the water nearly up to their hips, and their garments tucked about their waists; the greater number with black or tawny pickaninnies strapped to their backs. Occasionally droves of horses and mules come up and thrust their heads among them. In the middle of the square is a whipping-post, to which some refractory member is tied and punished; and round about are vendas and stalls, where fish, flesh, and fruit, of a quality not very agreeable to look at, are

sold for the lower classes, who constantly crowd the place, mixed with the blacks.

Notwithstanding the vigilance and severity of the police, frequent commotions take place here from some trifling, momentary cause. I was one day looking down on this extraordinary scene from the convent of S. Antonio, when suddenly the whole square was in a state of insurrection; the men tossing their cans, the women splashing the water, and the police exercising their whips, and all scrambling, shouting, screaming, and laughing, with the most extraordinary confusion; while the odour exhaled from such a surface of perspiring bodies, in a state of excitement on a wet day, sent up to us a smoaking incense that was quite intolerable. It was in this place the Irish were attacked by the black and white rabble, as they were marching quietly through the square, which was one cause of the disturbance that alarmed the empire.

Not far from the Carioca, in the Rua dos Barbonos, is another fountain supplied from the same source, called the Mareccas, because the water issues from brass pipes in the form of a sea fowl, so named by the Brazilians. It stands opposite a good wide street, which leads to the Passio Publico, and presents at one end

the pleasing view of the public gardens, and at the other this ornamental fountain. It is in the new part of the town, and affords a proof of improvement in the construction of streets, compared with the old. The whole of this space was a pestiferous marsh, till it was filled up and rendered habitable by the indefatigable Vasconcellos, in the year 1785, as appears by these words in the inscription on the fountain—" PESTIFERO QUONDAM EXSICCATO LACU, ET AMBULATIONIS FORMA REDACTO, INGENTI MURO MARINIS AQUIS PROPULSIS, FONTANIS INDUCTIS VOMENTI ÆRE."

Besides these, there is a large fountain in the palace square close on the water, one in the Mata Cavallos, and two in the Catete street, constructed by the Marquez Livradio, which the citizens of Rio commemorate by a classical inscription, concluding with the words " SENATVS POPULVSQ: SEBASTIONOPOLIS."

But when the arrival of the court had brought such an accession of people to the town, it was found necessary to increase the supply of water from another source. Besides the waterfall from the Corcovado, there are two from the Tijuca, another mountain range, about eight or nine miles from the city, which I also visited with a friend. We proceeded through Mato Porcos, beyond which the road suddenly terminated, at a point

which the bolleros from the city will not pass. From hence the road was rugged and mountainous. As the emperor was one day riding along it, he perceived a ferruginous appearance staining the rock, over which a stream trickled. He immediately alighted, examined it, and found it a strong chalybeate, which on trial was proved to possess the medicinal virtues of its class of waters. He therefore caused a reservoir to be formed, and a neat edifice erected over it with the following inscription :*—

" FONTE D'AGOA FERREA DESCOBERTO PELO IMPERADOR PEDRO Imo. EM. 24 DECEMBRO DE 1823."

This is open to the public, and occasionally frequented by invalids, but more usually the water is bottled and sent to Rio. On applying some tests, I found it very strong; a dense scum covered the surface, and a thick ferruginous crust was deposited wherever it past.

Ascending from hence to the summit of the gorge, the scene was very magnificent; on one side was the bay which we had left, and on the other the broad Atlantic. The steep valley leading to it, was full of enormous boulders of granite as large as churches, but perfectly spherical, like stones upon a beach, the angles

* " Fountain of chalybeate water, discovered by the Emperor Pedro I. 24th December, 1823."

R. W. ad. loc: del.t

N. Whittock lith.

CHALYBEATE WELL.

on the Road to Tiruco

rubbed off evidently from the same cause, mutual attrition. What a sublime and awful conception does such an appearance give of the convulsions of nature, when the mountain masses were hurled down, and rolled about by the undulations of the water, as if they had been pebbles in the bed of a river.

Over this wild glen the Tijuca impends 1750 feet high, and sends down two cascades. One tumbles over a broad ledge, and finally discharges itself through a lake into the Atlantic ocean. Beside this waterfall, are still seen the remains of shrines and cells, said to have been erected by the Brazilian ecclesiastics when they took refuge in this solitary spot from the French, under Du Guay Truim, in 1711. The other cataract falls in an opposite direction, and forms the river Maracanan, which runs into the bay near S. Christovão. This is perhaps one of the highest and most beautiful in South America. The whole river, running along the mountain above, arrives at the almost perpendicular face of the rock, over which it shoots like water from the eaves of a house, scarcely touching the surface of the fall. Its height is estimated at fifty braças, or 300 feet; and when you stand nearly under it and look up, it is really a magnificent spectacle. The spray that is ejected from it,

forms a shower like that at Niagara; and in particular positions of the sun, displays beautiful rainbows. The valley into which it falls is a deep sequestered glen, and every natural accessory to it is in keeping with its sublime and beautiful character. A French artist, struck with its features, built a dwelling house on the flat sward close under the fall, and added a profusion of roses and other cultivated shrubs to the wild vegetation of the place; but the utter solitude soon subdued his enthusiasm, and the lively proprietor speedily abandoned it for the busy haunts at Rio.

It is from this beautiful waterfall that a second supply of water is brought to the city by the river Maracanan. In the year 1809, the first stream was conducted from this by wooden pipes by the direction of the king; but an aqueduct to convey, and a large fountain, called Xafariz, to receive the water in the Campo de S. Anna, were then begun. They took nine years to complete them; and on the 24th of June, 1818, when all was ready, the worthy monarch, with all his family, attended to see the completion of his benevolent and useful work. The fountain, as soon as he arrived, was set flowing from twenty-two brazen spouts; and he saw with delight all the people run to drink of it, as a new and extraordinary

luxury brought to this distant part of the town.

Notwithstanding those numerous fountains, the increase of the city again demands an additional supply, of this most necessary article for the support of human life. On our arrival at Rio there had been a long period of dry weather, the water had become very scarce, and not only deficient in quantity, but deteriorated in quality. Instead of the pure and limpid element which descended from the mountain, it was turbid, dirty, fœtid, and full of insects; and even this was so dear as to be almost inaccessible to the poor. Happily, the rainy season set in soon after, and the supply was profuse; but the possibility of a continuance of hot weather drying up the present sources, greatly alarmed the people; and they talked of excavating reservoirs and building more fountains. Among the improvements which will at no distant time take place, is the conveyance of water by pipes to the different houses, which this great command of elevation would enable them easily to do. The water, as it is at present conveyed by negroes, is singularly offensive. It is impregnated with the perspiration that streams from their naked bodies, and they constantly thrust their hands and arms in the bottom of their cans

for any purpose; and the water there has always a foul look and a bad odour.

The supply of food is abundant and constant. Herds of black cattle continually come from the interior, and are driven to the Coral, a large open space on the Praya de Luzia, close on the sea-shore. Beside this, are erected the matanças, or public slaughter-houses, where they are killed, and then conveyed on negroes' heads to different stalls in the city. The most disagreeable spectacle I have ever witnessed, is one of these negro butchers with a greasy rag round his waist, and his naked body, covered with blood and gore, perspiring under a raw carcass. This Coral is not far from the public gardens, and situated on a delightful walk along the sea-shore; but the sight and smell of every thing about it are so offensive, that few venture to pass it. The beef is sometimes cut into long flakes and dried; and in that state called carne secco. When hanging in vendas it looks like hides of leather.

Mutton is never seen in the markets of Rio. It is a meat to which the Brazilians seem to have as great a prejudice, as Jews to pork. When sheep were first imported into South America, in the temperate southern regions, they extensively multiplied, and became wild; but in Brazil they

greatly deteriorated. The wool lost its fleeciness, and became stiff and wiry, like the hair of old goats. How far this unnatural change might have affected the people, I cannot say; but they do not eat the sheep, and will not rear them. Beyond the serra of Martiqueira, are the most extensive and beautiful downs in the world, covered with pasture like those of Sussex, and in a temperate region; but there is not to be seen on them a single sheep. Towards the Rio de la Plata, on the spacious plains, where they have greatly increased, I have been informed they apply them to an extraordinary use. Fuel is very scarce, and mutton very plentiful, so they throw sheep into the kilns as a material to burn bricks. It was formerly not unusual to drive sheep alive into a lime-kiln; but an edict was made against this cruel practice, which is still in force. "I tell you the tale as 'twas told to me," by several people; and on inquiry into the truth of it, from a gentleman who had lately come from that country, and whose veracity I could not doubt, he informed me, that he had actually seen a man at Buenos Ayres, throw a shoulder of mutton as fuel on the top of the fire. Mutton, however, is sometimes purchased at Rio by Europeans; for whose use alone it is killed.

It is very bad. It is necessary to bespeak it expressly from a butcher, who charges one patac five vintems, or about 1*s.* 8*d.* per pound for it, if at all eatable.

Pork, on the contrary, is the great food of the people, and it is plentiful and very good. It is prepared and eaten in a peculiar way. When the pig is killed, the butcher dexterously scoops out the bones and muscular flesh, leaving behind only the covering of fat. In this state it is salted, folded up, and sent in great quantities to Rio, where it is called toucinho. All the stores and vendas are full of it; and it is used commonly for culinary purposes, and forms an ingredient in every Brazilian article of cookery.

Fish is in plenty, but not remarkable. Prawns are very large, resembling young lobsters. Oysters are misshapen, long and deep, with a very thick shell. Their quality is dangerous, and a very small quantity, even a single fish, produces on strangers a violent cathartic effect. Red mullets are abundant and very good. There is a species of gurnet,* with enormous pectoral fins as long as its body, and larger in proportion than those of a flying-fish; though I do not find they ever use them as wings. I have

* Trygla evolans.

frequently seen them taken out of the sea, just before our windows. Dried cod, from Newfoundland, is the constant food during Lent. Among the fish peculiar to the harbour, there is one of which I have heard extraordinary stories. It is called a mara. When young it is eaten as good food; but when old it attains an enormous size and a fearful voracity; insomuch so, that the monks of Sam Bento formerly paid a large sum of money, for every one destroyed. Col. Cunningham informed me, that about sixteen years ago, he remembered that three persons were devoured by it in different parts of the bay; one was taken, immediately after destroying a man, on the shore of Praya Grande, and was then exhibited at the custom-house. It required ten men, he said, to carry it; and it was covered with scales as large as a dollar. I could not learn that it had been latterly seen by any person; but the rumour of its existence still deters persons from bathing. The blacks, who are elsewhere amphibious, never venture beyond their knees; and white men are very rarely seen in the water. Sharks are not dreaded in the bay.

The people of Rio can raise no trigo, or wheat, themselves, but are very fond of wheaten bread, and are fastidious as to its quality.

They consume from eighty to one thousand barrels of flour annually, which is almost entirely sent from the United States; though till lately it was not much used. It is now a substitute for farinha, or meal of mandioca, the produce of the country. The bakers only purchase a few barrels from a cargo as a sample, before they venture on a large quantity; and flour of an inferior quality cannot be sold. In consequence of this, the wheaten bread at Rio is very excellent; indeed I have never in any country met better, and seldom so good. The consumption, however, is confined to the better classes—slaves never taste it.

The farinaceous food of the poor is feijão preto, black kidney beans, and mandioca meal. The former is always prepared with toucinho fat; the latter is a snow-white powder, from the pounded mandioca root, and eaten without any other preparation than drying and grinding; it is put into a calabash, and the prepared beans mixed with it, where they look like black beetles crawling in a heap of lime. Mandioca is also eaten with carne secco, and in that state rations of it were served out to the Irish. The beef was dry and tough, and the flour hard and gritty; and an Irishman afterwards complained to me, that "he got nothing to eat but saw-dust

and sole-leather." They also use the meal of Indian corn, which they call milho; but it is more generally given unground to horses, of whose food it forms a considerable portion. It is often boiled whole with sugar or treacle, and called angu de milho: it is a good pudding.

They sell in the shops a nut called mindoubi,* which grows at the root of a small plant. They extract from it a great quantity of oil, but it is also used for food, and when parched, is very good. Negro women are constantly shelling and parching it in the streets.

The seed of a native shrub, called fedagosa,† is frequently roasted, and used for coffee, and by some more highly prized. It grows in great profusion round Rio, adorning the sands with its yellow blossoms.

Fruit is abundant and delicious; pine-apples are in immense quantities. On the sea-shore, near the mouth of the harbour, is a long sandy district, entirely covered with pine-apple plants, and here I rode one day nearly three miles through a pine-apple garden. It is indigenous to Brazil, where there are many species growing on the banks; they are called, and cried about the streets, by the name of ananas. I have

* Arachis hypogeia. † Cassia occidentalis.

often bought them very fine for a vintem, about three halfpence a-piece.

Next in excellence is the manga. This is a fruit larger than an apple, always green; when not ripe, it exudes a clear juice, as strong and pungent as spirits of turpentine, of which it never loses the flavour. When ripe, the pulp is a bright orange, but the stone is covered with long tough fibres, like coarse hair, which penetrate the pulp, and render it difficult to detach it. I have often regretted that from this cause I never could eat more than half the fruit.

The yambos, or rose-apple, is a very beautiful fruit, exactly resembling an apple in size, shape, and colour. It is, however, hollow inside, containing two nuts, which rattle when the fruit is shaken. Its flesh is the consistence of an apple, but more insipid.

The berries of three kinds of myrtles are used as esculents. The first, called grumixam,* is a dark purple fruit, the size of a small plum, exuding a purple juice. It is highly wholesome and aromatic, and the most grateful of the native fruits: it makes a delightful conserve. The next, called pitanga,† is about the same size, but of a bright red colour, distinctly ribbed on

* Myrtus lucida. † Myrtus pitanga.

the surface. It is harsh and austere, but makes an excellent conserve, and a very agreeable ardent spirit is distilled from it. The third is called cambuim,* and covers the sandy shore between Bota Fogo and the Sugar-loaf, where the people who sell it, come in crowds to gather it from the myrtle bushes. The fruit is dark brown.

The custard-apple† is also much esteemed as a native fruit. It has the appearance of a large fir cone; the pulp is exactly of the consistence and taste of custard. A new species, called cherimolea,‡ has been lately introduced from Peru and Chili, which produces an exquisite fruit.

The mamoon, or marrow-apple,§ is nearly as large as a pine-apple. It grows in clusters on the summit of a tree, with a stem like a cabbage-stalk, and very large angular leaves. Almost every yard in Rio has a mamooneiro planted in it, and it is one of the characteristic traits of the country. The fruit has a rich, fœtid taste, of an animal flavour, bearing a strong resemblance to marrow, from which it is justly named.

The acajou‖ is a singular fruit. It is a large

* Myrtus Lusitanica, var. Annona tripetala.
† Annona squamosa.
§ Carica papaya.
‖ Anacardium acajou.

fleshy appendage, the size of a baking-apple, on the top of which a single seed stands, as long as a Windsor-bean, and of the same shape, attached by the tip; you would naturally suppose the large fruit was intended also by nature as a matrix of seed, but it contains only a fleshy pulp, very juicy, cool, and refreshing, but rather austere. The bean, when held to the candle, emits an inflammable vapour, which ignites, with an explosion, and causes a little fire-work, for the amusement of people after dinner.

The fruit of several species of passion-flower is used under the general name of maracujá, particularly that of the beautiful scarlet flower, which adorns our hot-houses, but is the commonest plant in the hedges of Brazil.* The maracujá is held in high respect by the Brazilians, for the same reason that we call it passion-flower, because its parts of fructification have a near resemblance to many emblems connected with the cross. It is described by a poet as having a round form like a diadem surrounded with points like thorns; a pillar in the midst, and distinct emblems of the holy wounds and the sacred cross, the nails and the

* Passiflora alata.

cruel lance; and its white colour, spotted with violet, records the sacred blood.*

I should mention, that the banana is still more sacred and universal here, than at Madeira. The people also entertain the same superstition of the impropriety of cutting it across, lest they should sever a sacred emblem; and further, they believe, as Du Tertre says, it was the fruit of Adam in Paradise, who saw in it the future sacred cross.† It is the common breakfast of the people, who do not cut, but dip the fruit in farinha meal, and eat it as we do a radish and salt.

The people of Rio are more intemperate in eating than in drinking. Port wine is not much used, because it is too strong and heating for the climate; that which they hold in highest esteem—at least use in the greatest quantities, is Catalonian, of which there is a considerable importation every year. The common people, and

* "He na forma redonda, qual diadema
De pontas, como espinhos, rodeada;
A columna no meio, e um claro emblema
Das chagas santas, e da cruz sagrada:
Vem-se os tres cravos, e na parte extrema
Com arte a cruel lança figurada:
A côr hê branca; mas d'hum roxo exangue
Salpicada, recorda o pio sangue."—CARAMURU. cvii. 39.

† On this Father Labat remarks—"Adam pourroit avoir meilleure vue que nous, ou la croix de les Bananes etoit mieux formée."—*Voyage*, tom. iii. p. 307.

particularly the negroes, use caxas, or cachaça, an inferior kind of rum, distilled from some result of sugar-cane. This is so cheap and accessible, that foreigners, particularly sailors, get greatly addicted to it. Much of the misconduct and misfortunes of the Germans and Irish arose from it, particularly the latter, who, when they got rations of bad food, which they could not eat, exchanged it for caxas, which readily intoxicated them. It is not, however, an unwholesome or unpalatable liquor, and in the winter and rainy season, is often found a salutary antidote against the effects of cold and wet. A distiller has lately tried to improve it, and by a further process converted it into good rum.

December the 2d, was the birth-day of Dom Pedro d'Alcantara, the imperial prince, and heir-apparent to the crown. It was one of the many grand gala days when there is a beijamão, or kiss-hand, for natives, and a presentation for foreigners; and we prepared to pay our respects, when I was to have the honour to be presented to His Imperial Majesty, and be a witness of the splendour of his court. About twelve o'clock we proceeded to the palace, which, on this, and similar occasions, was surrounded with a throng of carriages, and a crowd of people; for, notwithstanding the frequent recurrence

of these galas, the inhabitants of Rio have not yet lost their fondness for show and display, though I am told it is fast wearing away. The palace is approached by a large portico, and a long hall, which leads to the stair-case. These were filled with soldiers and officers of the court, in gay uniform, and full-dress, accompanied by a band, all playing and singing, or rather shouting, the Emperor's national hymn.

We passed on through a lane of guards, up the stair-case, to the suite of apartments above. This consisted of several rooms, leading into each other, so as to extend the whole length of one side of the palace-square. They had been but just finished, were opened on this day for the first time, and were as gay as paint could make them. The windows, however, had never been cleaned, I believe, since the palace was erected, and the dim and dingy glass, in some places cracked and broken, was not in keeping with the gaiety and brightness of the rest. The walls were hung with pictures representing eminent men, and remarkable facts in the history of Portugal; but that which most attracted my notice was a fine portrait of Catherine of Lisbon, consort of Charles II. of England, painted by Sir Peter Lely, distinguished by all the languishing softness of that

artist. It accompanied the court in their emigration.

In every conspicuous place, the arms of Imperial Brazil were emblazoned. These arms have been twice changed in the space of seven years; when Brazil was united as a kingdom with Portugal, and when it was separated from it. On the first occasion, Dom John placed the shield, containing the arms of Portugal, on an armillary sphere. The sphere was first adopted as a device, in the reign of Manoel, in 1499. Albuquerque, on the capture of Goa, ordered coin to be struck in different metals, having on one side the sphere, and on the other the word *mea*, which read *mea esphera*, implying, it should appear, that the Portuguese now claimed the eastern hemisphere as their allotment.

In 1815, John VI. assumed the sphere as the peculiar device of Brazil, and placed on it the shield, containing the quinas, or five emblems of Portugal, surrounded with the orla of castles of the Algarves. I mention the above origin of the sphere, because I had imagined it was peculiar to Brazil, and for the first time adopted by John VI. till I was better informed.

On the 12th of May, 1822, the people of Rio conferred on Dom Pedro the title of "Perpetual Defender of Brazil;" and on the 18th of Sep-

tember following, a decree was issued, conformable to the state of things, and erasing from the arms the shield of Portugal imposed upon them. It stated that as Brazil had now occupied that place among the grand families of the nations of the earth, which of right appertained to it, it was proper that its armorial bearings should correspond to distinguish it, not only from those of Portugal and the Algarves, but to characterize a rich and vast continent. Wishing, however, to preserve the arms conferred on Brazil by his august father, and to commemorate the name imposed by the first discoverer, and also to include the states comprehended within its vast rivers, which are its natural boundaries, the following arms were adopted.

An armillary sphere of gold on a cross of the order of Christ, surrounded by a circle of nineteen stars of silver, indicating the number of provinces into which Brazil is divided. The imperial crown surmounting the shield, and the sides supported by two branches, one of coffee and the other of tobacco, represented in their proper colours, as emblems of the commercial riches of the country. Coffee and tobacco, you will say, are not very dignified supporters to national armorial bearings, and I doubt if they are to be found in the herald's

office; but you will agree with me, that these great natural productions of the soil, as emblematic devices of the wealth and prosperity of the country, are to the full as rational and intelligible as griffins and unicorns. The Banda Oriental was one of the nineteen provinces included between the great rivers alluded to in the decree; it is now abandoned, but its representative star is still visible in the Brazilian arms, and is likely to remain there as long as France in the arms of England.

At the same time that the emperor decreed the imperial arms, he regulated the livery of his servants. The edital stated that the former was too expensive, and he adopted one more conformable to the climate of Brazil. The colour fixed on was green; and by a subsequent decree, every other person was prohibited from using it. It was from that time to be held sacred to the royal family, as it is in Turkey to the family of Mahomet, and exclusively confined to the imperial domestics, who were all clad in rich green suits for this occasion.

All the foreign diplomatic corps were assembled to pay their respects, and with the naval officers of the squadron in the bay in full uniform, composed a large and respectable assemblage at this transatlantic court. There were

two English ministers, Lords Strangford and Ponsonby; Baron Mareschal, the Austrian; Monsieur Pontois, the French; Baron Dedel, the Netherlands; Count Löwenstjerne, the Danish; Mr. Tudor, the United States, &c. with their respective suites, besides many more distinguished officers and strangers.

Presently the sound of trumpets and the trampling of horses in the square below announced the arrival of the emperor from his palace of S. Christovão, and on looking out of the window, we saw him sweeping into the square in a carriage with six horses, accompanied by his guard of honour. This guard was established by a decree of the 1st of December, 1822. On the preceding January, when the Portuguese soldiers had threatened the person of the emperor, the inhabitants of St. Paul's formed a voluntary guard to protect him. To keep alive the memory of the spontaneous loyalty of the people, it was determined by the emperor to form a permanent body to be ready always to be about his person when required, and that it should be called a guard of honour, consisting of three squadrons of cavalry, one for each of the provinces of Rio, St. Paul's, and the Minas Geraes, each consisting of two companies of sixty privates, besides

officers, comprising the most respectable men of their provinces. They assemble four times in the year, are enrolled four days, and are ready to attend, when the exigency of the state requires, only on the persons of the emperor and imperial family, particularly on the two great anniversaries of the Acclamation and the declaration of independence. Any absenting themselves, without reasonable excuse, are expelled and never again admitted. Their uniforms are white, with gilt helmets, and they make a fine display. It appears, however, that their warm attachment has now quite cooled, and many would heartily wish to be exempt from a duty which they originally imposed on themselves.

After a short time a chamberlain announced to us, that the emperor was arrived, and we proceeded to pay our respects. We passed through an ante-chamber, where we now for the first time saw assembled the Brazilian nobility, officers, public functionaries, and distinguished ecclesiastics, in all the respective costumes of their orders; and as their dress was very rich, they formed not only a crowded but brilliant assembly. Having passed through a lane of these, we entered the presence-chamber. This was a very large spacious apartment. At the

further end was the throne, raised on several steps, under a canopy, on which stood the emperor in full uniform, with his son, a fine little fellow of three years old, standing beside him. With the exception of a few officers in distant parts, this apartment was quite vacant; and the etiquette is for each foreign minister to walk up singly, with his suite on one side, and when he has paid his respects to the throne, walk down at the other, and out at the door. The emperor received us very graciously, and looked, on his elevation, a fine and portly man. His boy was not dressed in embroidery, but in a plain jacket and trousers, such as he would play marbles in, and looked so simple and pretty that he interested every body. When I was presented, he put his hands into his breeches pockets, and looked very knowing at my dress, which was not exactly that of the clergy he was accustomed to.

It is the etiquette to retreat backwards, always with your face to the throne, and as I had a long apartment to traverse in this way, I found it very inconvenient with my gown. In the year 1741, Dr. Burke, the titular Bishop of Ossory, was sent on a mission from Rome to the court of Portugal, and on retiring backwards from the throne, he trod on the tail of his gown,

and fell flat on his back. From that time an alvará was issued, that all clergymen in their robes should be exempt from this inconvenient ceremony. If the alvará had been in force in Brazil, I should have been glad to avail myself of it, for before I reached the end of the long room, I more than once was near sharing the fate of the titular Bishop of Ossory.

We had hoped that the situation of our house, ventilated by the wholesome breezes, and open to the lovely prospect of the bay, with the warm but temperate atmosphere of a healthy country, would now restore our young friend; and for a time he seemed to improve, but he soon became alarmingly ill, and rapidly declined till the 25th of November, when he expired; and the only duty left us was to perform the last rites at his grave. The burying ground attached to the English chapel lies at the north extremity of the town, at the bottom of a small but beautiful bay, called the Gamboa. It consists of three or four acres of land, surrounded by a wall, with a few trees still standing within the area; and it is proposed to plant a great number. The situation is extremely beautiful, on an inclined plane, sloping towards the sea, and commanding an extensive prospect of the bay and islands. In the centre stands

a small chapel, used only on the occasion of funerals, in which is read a part of the burial service.

The emperor, whose palace of S. Christovão is not very distant, has frequently visited this spot, and was much struck with the appearance of the cemetery. The sober solemnity of the English service attracted his notice; but above all, the removal of bodies from the centre of the city, induced him to express a strong approbation of our mode of interment; and it is said he proposes to establish similar cemeteries near Rio, on the extensive scale of Père la Chaise, and gradually reconcile the Brazilians to burials in the open country.

Here it was I performed the last office for our young friend, who crossed the Atlantic in search of that health he could not find; and I felt as if I never performed a more sad or solemn duty. The evils and infirmities incident to mature age, are the natural and expected consequences of the frailty of our perishable nature. But when God is pleased to afflict the young, we contemplate the prime of life prematurely embittered, and the season of life blighted, when we hoped to see it green and flourishing. As yet there are but few grave-stones erected in this ground to

mark the place of the departed; but a monument has been sent from England to designate the spot where his remains are deposited—and the first of the kind that has been erected. It is an urn supported on a pedestal of black marble, with the following inscription from the pen of his father.

H. S. E.
QUICQUID MORTALE HABUIT
GEORGIUS JOSEPHUS STANHOPE
PHILIPPI HENRICI COMITIS STANHOPE
FILIUS SECUNDO GENITUS
VIRTUTIBUS ET PIETATE INSIGNIS
PATRIÆ AMICIS ET PROPINQUIS
DESIDERATISSIMUS
NATUS DIE XVII. MARTII A.D. MDCCCVI.
OBIIT HAC URBE
DIE XXV. NOVEMBR: MDCCCXXVIII.
HOCCE MONUMENTUM
MOERENS PONERE CURAVIT
PATER QUEM EXIMIE DELEXIT.

END OF VOL. I.

R. CLAY, PRINTER, BREAD-STREET-HILL.

BOTOCUDOS
PROVINCE OF MINAS GERAES
PROVINCE OF RIO DE JANEIRO
PROVINCE OF SAO PAULO
ATLANTIC OCEAN
CAPITALS OF PROVINCES
Towns
Villages
Ranches and Fazendas
Map
OF THE PROVINCES OF
RIO DE JANEIRO
AND PART OF MINAS GERAES
(with the Authors Route.)

Plan of the City
of
RIO DE JANEIRO.
1829.

00088321

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 04 April, 2016